



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 07602923 4

(British)
NCI

THE
POETICAL WORKS
OF
JOHN MILTON.

WITH A MEMOIR.

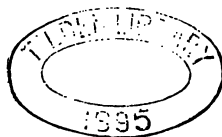
VOL. II.



BOSTON :
LITTLE, BROWN, AND COMPANY.
1866.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1864, by
LITTLE, BROWN, AND COMPANY,
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the District of Massa-
chusetts.

UNIVERSITY PRESS:
WELCH, BIGELOW, AND COMPANY,
CAMBRIDGE.



CONTENTS.

	VOL. II.	Page.
PARADISE LOST :		
Book V.....		1
Book VI.....		88
Book VII.....		78
Book VIII.....		101
Book IX.....		127
Book X.....		177
Book XI.....		223
Book XII.....		260
PARADISE REGAINED :		
Book I.....		285
Book II.....		308
Book III.....		328
Book IV.....		346

PARADISE LOST

BOOK V.

THE ARGUMENT.

MORNING approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: they come forth to their day-labours: their morning hymn at the door of their bower. GOD, to render man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to paradise; his appearance described, his coming discerned by Adam afar off, sitting at the door of his bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at table: Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state, and of his enemy, relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there incited them to rebel with him; persuading all but only Abdiel a seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

Now morn, her rosy steps in th' eastern clime
Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,

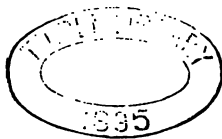
¹ *rosy steps*] Quintus Smyrnæus applies the epithet, *ροδόσφυρος* to Aurora. v. Lib. i. 137. *A. Dyce.*

² *sow'd*] 'Ambo de comis calorem, et ambo radios consequunt.' See *Anthol. Lat.* vol. i. p. 8, ed. Burm. Avieni, Orb. Desc. ver. 580, and Fragm. in Aristot. Poet.

Σπείρων θεκτίστην φλόγα. Upton.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1864, by
LITTLE, BROWN, AND COMPANY,
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the District of Massa-
chusetts.

UNIVERSITY PRESS:
WELCH, BIGELOW, AND COMPANY,
CAMBRIDGE.



CONTENTS.

	VOL. II.	Page
PARADISE LOST :		
Book V.....		1
Book VI.....		56
Book VII.....		73
Book VIII.....		111
Book IX.....		137
Book X.....		177
Book XI.....		223
Book XII.....		256
PARADISE REGAINED :		
Book I.....		283
Book II.....		316
Book III.....		348
Book IV.....		366

PARADISE LOST

BOOK V.

THE ARGUMENT.

MORNING approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: they come forth to their day-labours: their morning hymn at the door of their bower. GOD, to render man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to paradise; his appearance described, his coming discerned by Adam afar off, sitting at the door of his bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at table: Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state, and of his enemy, relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there incited them to rebel with him; persuading all but only Abdiel a seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

Now morn, her rosy steps in th' eastern clime
Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,

¹ *rosy steps*] Quintus Smyrnaeus applies the epithet, *ῥοδόσφυρος* to Aurora. v. Lib. i. 137. *A. Dyce*.

² *sow'd*] 'Ambo de comis calorem, et ambo radios consequunt.' See *Anthol. Lat.* vol. i. p. 8, ed. Burm. Avieni, Orb. Desc. ver. 580, and *Fragn.* in *Aristot. Poet.*

Σπείρων θ' οκτίσταν φλόγα. *Upton*.

When Adam wak'd, so custom'd, for his sleep
 Was aery light, from pure digestion bred, [sound
 And temperate vapours bland, which th' only
 Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan, 6
 Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill matin song
 Of birds on every bough : so much the more
 His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve
 With tresses discompos'd and glowing cheek, 10
 As through unquiet rest : he, on his side
 Leaning half-raised, with looks of cordial love
 Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
 Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,
 Shot forth peculiar graces : then with voice 15
 Mild, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
 Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus : *Awake,*

⁵ *only*] For 'alone.' Spens. F. Q. v. xi. 80.

'As if the *only* sound thereof she fear'd.'

⁶ *fuming*] v. Lucretii. lib. vi. Virg. Geo. II. 217.

⁶ *fan*] Sylvester's Du Bartas, p. 116.

Calls forth the winds. Oh Heaven's *fresh fans*, quoth he ;
 and p. 161 ;

'now began

Aurora's usher with his *windy fan*

Gently to shake the woods on every side.'

⁷ *matin*] Virg. Æn. viii. 456.

'Et *matutina* volucrum sub culmine *cantus*.' Newton.

¹⁷ *awake*] See Chaucer's Canterbury Tales, ver. 10012.
 (Marchant's Tale.)

'Rise up, my wif, my love, my lady free,
 The turtle's vois is heard, myn owen swete!
 The winter is gon, with all his raines wete!
 Come forth now,' &c.

My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,
 Heaven's last best gift, my ever new delight!
 Awake! the morning shines, and the fresh field ³⁰
 Calls us; we lose the prime, to mark how spring
 Our tended plants, how blows the citron grove,
 What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,
 How nature paints her colours, how the bee
 Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet. ³⁵

Such whisp'ring wak'd her, but with startled eye
 On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake.

O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,
 My glory, my perfection, glad I see
 Thy face, and morn return'd; for I this night, ⁴⁰
 Such night till this I never pass'd, have dream'd,
 If dream'd, not, as I oft am wont, of thee,
 Works of day pass'd, or morrow's next design,
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind
 Knew never till this irksome night: methought ⁴⁵
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk
 With gentle voice; I thought it thine: it said,
 Why sleep'st thou Eve? now is the pleasant time,
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
 To the night-warbling bird, that now awake ⁵⁰
 Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song; now reigns
 Full orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light

³⁰ *balmy reed*] *εὐώδμου καλάμωο*. v Dionysii Geog.
 ver. 987.

⁴¹ *his*] In the other passages, where the song of the night-
 ingale is described, the bird is of the feminine gender; v. iii.
 40. iv. 602. vii. 436. *Newton*.

Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,
 If none regard : heaven wakes with all his eyes,
 Whom to behold but thee, nature's desire ? ⁴⁵
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment
 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.
 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not:
 To find thee I directed then my walk ;
 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways ⁵⁰
 That brought me on a sudden to the tree
 Of interdicted knowledge : fair it seem'd,
 Much fairer to my fancy than by day :
 And as I wond'ring look'd, beside it stood
 One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from heaven
 By us oft seen ; his dewy locks distill'd ⁵⁵
 Ambrosia ; on that tree he also gaz'd ;
 And O fair plant, said he, with fruit surcharg'd,
 Deigns none to ease thy load and taste thy sweet,
 Nor god nor man ? Is knowledge so despis'd ? ⁶⁰
 Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste ?
 Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold
 Longer thy offer'd good ; why else set here ?
 This said, he paus'd not, but with vent'rous arm
 He pluck'd, he tasted ; me damp horror chill'd ⁶⁵
 At such bold words vouch'd with a deed so bold.
 But he thus overjoy'd : O fruit divine,

⁴⁴ *wakes*] G. Fletcher's *Christ's Victorie*, p. 1. st. 78.

'Heaven awakened all his eyes.' *Todd*.

⁵⁷ *Ambrosia*] Virg. *Æn.* i. 408.

'Ambrosiæque comæ divinum vertice odorem
 Spiravere.'

Hume.

Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus
 cropp'd,
 Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit
 For gods, yet able to make gods of men : 70
 And why not gods of men, since good, the more
 Communicated, more abundant grows,
 The author not impair'd, but honour'd more ?
 Here, happy creature, fair angelic Eve,
 Partake thou also ; happy though thou art, 75
 Happier thou may'st be, worthier canst not be :
 Taste this, and be henceforth among the gods
 Thyself a goddess, not to earth confin'd,
 But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes
 Ascend to heaven, by merit thine, and see 80
 What life the gods live there, and such live thou.
 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,
 Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part
 Which he had pluck'd ; the pleasant savoury smell
 So quicken'd appetite, that I, methought, 85
 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld
 The earth outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide
 And various : wond'ring at my flight and change
 To this high exaltation, suddenly 90
 My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down;
 And fell asleep : but O how glad I wak'd

⁷¹ good]

'Ista natura est boni,

Communicari gaudet, et multis suo

Prodesse fructu. Nemo participi carens

Vivit beatus.'

Grotii Adamus Exeul. p. 23.

THE
POETICAL WORKS
OF
JOHN MILTON.

WITH A MEMOIR.

VOL. II.



BOSTON:
LITTLE, BROWN, AND COMPANY.
1866.

PARADISE LOST

BOOK V.

THE ARGUMENT.

MORNING approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: they come forth to their day-labours: their morning hymn at the door of their bower. GOD, to render man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to paradise; his appearance described, his coming discerned by Adam afar off, sitting at the door of his bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at table: Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state, and of his enemy, relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there incited them to rebel with him; persuading all but only Abdiel a seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

Now morn, her rosy steps in th' eastern clime
Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,

¹ *rosy steps*] Quintus Smyrnaeus applies the epithet, *ῥοδόσφυρος* to Aurora. v. Lib. i. 137. *A. Dyce.*

² *sow'd*] 'Ambo de comis calorem, et ambo radios consequunt.' See *Anthol. Lat.* vol. i. p. 8, ed. Burm. Avieni, Orb. Desc. ver. 580, and Fragm. in Aristot. Poet.

Σπείρων θ' οκτίσταν φλόγα. *Ὑπὸν.*

When Adam wak'd, so custom'd, for his sleep
 Was aery light, from pure digestion bred, [sound
 And temperate vapours bland, which th' only
 Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan, 6
 Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill matin song
 Of birds on every bough : so much the more
 His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve
 With tresses discompos'd and glowing cheek, 10
 As through unquiet rest : he, on his side
 Leaning half-rai's'd, with looks of cordial love
 Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
 Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,
 Shot forth peculiar graces : then with voice 15
 Mild, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
 Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus : Awake,

⁵ *only*] For 'alone.' Spens. F. Q. v. xi. 30.

'As if the *only* sound thereof she fear'd.'

⁶ *fuming*] v. Lucretii. lib. vi. Virg. Geo. ii. 217. .

⁶ *fan*] Sylvester's Du Bartas, p. 116.

Calls forth the winds. Oh Heaven's *fresh fans*, quoth he;'
 and p. 161;

'now began

Aurora's usher with his *windy fan*

Gently to shake the woods on every side.'

⁷ *matin*] Virg. Æn. viii. 456.

'Et *matutini* volucrum sub culmine *cantus*.' Newton.

¹⁷ *awake*] See Chaucer's Canterbury Tales, ver. 10012.
 (Marchant's Tale.)

'Rise up, my wif, my love, my lady free,
 The turtle's vois is heard, myn owen swete!
 The winter is gon, with all his raines wete!
 Come forth now,' &c.

My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,
 Heaven's last best gift, my ever new delight!
 Awake! the morning shines, and the fresh field ²⁰
 Calls us; we lose the prime, to mark how spring
 Our tended plants, how blows the citron grove,
 What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,
 How nature paints her colours, how the bee
 Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet. ²⁵

Such whisp'ring wak'd her, but with startled eye
 On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake.

O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,
 My glory, my perfection, glad I see
 Thy face, and morn return'd; for I this night, ³⁰
 Such night till this I never pass'd, have dream'd,
 If dream'd, not, as I oft am wont, of thee,
 Works of day pass'd, or morrow's next design,
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind
 Knew never till this irksome night: methought ³⁵
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk
 With gentle voice; I thought it thine: it said,
 Why sleep'st thou Eve? now is the pleasant time,
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
 To the night-warbling bird, that now awake ⁴⁰
 Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song; now reigns
 Full orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light

²⁸ *balmy reed*] *εὐώδμου καλάμιοι*. v Dionysii Geog.
 ver. 987.

⁴¹ *his*] In the other passages, where the song of the night-
 ingale is described, the bird is of the feminine gender; v. iii.
 40. iv. 602. vii. 486. *Newton*.

Thousand celestial ardours, where he stood
 Veil'd with his gorgeous wings, upspringing light
 Flew through the midst of heaven; th' angelic
 choirs, 251

On each hand parting, to his speed gave way
 Through all th' empyreal road; till at the gate
 Of heaven arriv'd, the gate self-open'd wide
 On golden hinges turning, as by work 255
 Divine the sov'reign Architect had fram'd.
 From hence, no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,
 Star interpos'd, however small, he sees,
 Not unconform to other shining globes,
 Earth and the garden of GOD, with cedars crown'd
 Above all hills: as when by night the glass 261
 Of Galileo, less assur'd, observes
 Imagin'd lands and regions in the moon:
 Or pilot from amidst the Cyclades
 Delos, or Samos, first appearing kens 265
 A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight
 He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky
 Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing
 Now on the polar winds, then with quick fan
 Winnows the buxom air; till within soar 270
 Of towering eagles, to all the fowls he seems
 A phoenix, gaz'd by all, as that sole bird,
 When, to inshrine his reliques in the sun's

²⁴⁹ *ardours*] 'ardours,' mean the 'seraphim.' It is one of the words used by Dante for angels. *Todd.*

²⁶⁶ *prone*] Virg. *Æn.* iv. 258.

Toto præceps se corpore ad undas
 Misit.

Newton.

Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.
 At once on th' eastern cliff of paradise 276
 He lights, and to his proper shape returns
 A seraph wing'd : six wings he wore, to shade
 His lineaments divine ; the pair that clad
 Each shoulder broad came mantling o'er his breast
 With regal ornament ; the middle pair 280
 Girt like a starry zone his waist, and round
 Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold
 And colours dipp'd in heaven ; the third his feet
 Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail,
 Sky-tinctur'd grain. Like Maia's son he stood, 285

277 *shade*] Statii Silv. iii. 4. 30.

'Ex humeris nullæ fulgentibus, *umbra*.'

281 *starry zone*] Compare Marino's Sl. of the Innocents,
 p. 50, st. xcvi. describing an angel.

'When in celestial colours art contends
 With azure gold, and white with purest red.
 For skirts girt at the waist, then each depends
 Loosely, nor further than the knees are spread.
 Which, lest thy waving be too much display'd,
 A golden clasp restrains, with gems inlay'd.
 Extended on his shining back a pair
 Of ample wings their glorious colours show ;
 Most choice perfumes enrich his curling hair,
 And to the air the graceful tresses flow,' &c.

285 *son*] See Dante, Il. Purg. c. 8.

'E vidi uscir dell' alto, e scender giue
 Du' Angeli con due spade affocate,

.

Verdi, come fogliette pur mo nate,
 Erano 'n veste, che da verdi penne
 Percosse traén dietro e ventilata.

And shook his plumes, that heavenly fragrance fill'd
 The circuit wide. Straight knew him all the bands
 Of angels under watch; and to his state, ²⁹⁶
 And to his message high, in honour rise;
 For on some message high they guess'd him bound.
 Their glittering tents he pass'd, and now is come
 Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh,
 And flow'ring odors, cassia, nard, and balm;
 A wilderness of sweets; for nature here
 Wanton'd as in her prime, and play'd at will ³⁰⁰
 Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,
 Wild above rule or art, enormous bliss.
 Him through the spicy forest onward come
 Adam discern'd, as in the door he sat
 Of his cool bower, while now the mounted sun ³⁰⁰
 Shot down direct his fervid rays, to warm [needs;
 Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam
 And Eve within, due at her hour prepar'd
 For dinner savoury fruits, of taste to please
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst ³⁰⁵
 Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,
 Berry, or grape; to whom thus Adam call'd.
 Haste hither, Eve, and worth thy sight behold

²⁹⁶ *shook*] Sannaz. de Partu Virg. i. 107.

— 'ingentes *explicat* alas

Ac tectis late *insuetum diffundit odorem*.'

and Fairfax's Tasso, lib. i. st. 14. *Newton. Todd.*

³⁰⁰ *milky stream*] v. Apulei Metam. i. p. 27. ed. Delph.

'En, inquam, explere *laticæ fontes lacteo*.'

Beaumont's Psyche, c. iii. st. 56.

'And from the *milkie shore* of the next spring!'

Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape
 Comes this way moving, seems another morn ³¹⁰
 Ris'n on mid-noon; some great behest from heaven
 To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe
 This day to be our guest. But go with speed,
 And what thy stores contain bring forth, and pour
 Abundance, fit to honour and receive ³¹⁵
 Our heavenly stranger; well we may afford
 Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow
 From large bestow'd, where nature multiplies
 Her fertile growth, and by disburd'ning grows
 More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare. ³²⁰

To whom thus Eve. Adam, earth's hallow'd
 mould,

Of God inspir'd, small store will serve, where store
 All seasons ripe for use hangs on the stalk;
 Save what by frugal storing firmness gains
 To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes. ³²⁵
 But I will haste, and from each bough and brake,
 Each plant and juiciest gourd, will pluck such
 To entertain our angel guest, as he [choice
 Beholding shall confess, that here on earth
 God hath dispens'd his bounties as in heaven. ³³⁰

³⁰⁹ *what*] See Dante, *Il Purgatorio*, c. xii.

'Vedi colà un' Angel, che s' appresta
 Per venir verso noi.'

³¹⁰ *morn*] See Crashaw's *Delights*, p. 52.

'Who's this that comes arched in rayes that scorn
 Acquaintance with the Sun? What *second morn*
 At *midday* opes a presence?'

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste
 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent
 What choice to choose for delicacy best,
 What order, so contriv'd as not to mix
 Tastes, not well join'd, inelegant, but bring 335
 Taste after taste upheld with kindest change;
 Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk
 Whatever earth, all-bearing mother, yields
 In India east or west, or middle shore,
 In Pontus, or the Punic coast, or where 340
 Alcinous reign'd, fruit of all kinds, in coat,
 Rough, or smooth rin'd, or bearded husk, or shell,
 She gathers, tribute large, and on the board
 Heaps with unsparing hand: for drink the grape
 She crushes, inoffensive must, and meathes 345
 From many a berry, and from sweet kernels press'd
 She tempers dulcet creams; nor these to hold
 Wants her fit vessels pure; then strews the ground
 With rose and odours from the shrub unfum'd.
 Mean while our primitive great sire, to meet 350
 His god-like guest, walks forth, without more train
 Accompany'd than with his own complete
 Perfections; in himself was all his state,
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits
 On princes, when their rich retinue long 355

333 *choice to choose*] So P. L. viii. 180. 'move motion.' ix.
 289. 'thoughts misthought,' xi. 427. 'sinned sin.' *Newton*.
 346 *vessels*] The shell of the fruits. See Book iv. ver. 835.

——— 'and in the *rin'd*,
 Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream.'

Of horses led and grooms besmear'd with gold
 Dazzles the crowd, and sets them all agape.
 Nearer his presence Adam, though not aw'd,
 Yet with submiss approach and reverence meek,
 As to a superior nature, bowing low, 386
 Thus said. Native of heaven, for other place
 None can than heaven such glorious shape contain,
 Since by descending from the thrones above,
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us 388
 Two only, who yet by sov'reign gift possess
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower
 To rest, and what the garden choicest bears
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat
 Be over, and the sun more cool decline. 390

Whom thus the angelic Virtue answer'd mild.
 Adam, I therefore came, nor art thou such
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,
 As may not oft invite, though spirits of heaven,
 To visit thee : lead on then where thy bower 395
 O'ershades ; for these mid-hours, till ev'ning rise,
 I have at will. So to the sylvan lodge
 They came, that like Pomona's arbour smil'd
 With flow'rets deck'd and fragrant smells : but Eve
 Undeck'd, save with her self, more lovely fair 398
 Than wood-nymph, or the fairest goddess feign'd
 Of three that in Mount Ida naked strove,

³⁸⁶ *besmear'd*] Hor. Od. iv. 9. 14.

'Aurum vestibis illitum.' Hume.

³⁸⁷ *agape*] agaze. Benll. MS.

Stood to entertain her guest from heaven ; no veil
She needed, virtue-proof ; no thought infirm
Alter'd her cheek. On whom the angel Hail 385
Bestow'd, the holy salutation us'd
Long after to blest Mary, second Eve.

Hail, mother of mankind, whose fruitful womb
Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons,
Than with these various fruits the trees of GOD 390
Have heap'd this table. Rais'd of grassy turf
Their table was, and mossy seats had round,
And on her ample square from side to side
All autumn pil'd, though spring and autumn here
Danc'd hand in hand. A while discourse they hold,
No fear lest dinner cool, when thus began
Our author. Heavenly stranger, please to taste
These bounties which our Nourisher, from whom
All perfect good unmeasur'd out descends,
To us for food and for delight hath caus'd 400
The earth to yield ; unsavoury food, perhaps,
To spiritual natures : only this I know,
That one celestial Father gives to all.

To whom the angel. Therefore what he gives,
Whose praise be ever sung, to man in part 405
Spiritual, may of purest spirits be found
No ingrateful food : and food alike those pure
Intelligential substances require,
As doth your rational ; and both contain
Within them every lower faculty 410
Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,
Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,

And corporeal to incorporeal turn.
 For know, whatever was created needs
 To be sustain'd and fed; of elements 415
 The grosser feeds the purer; earth the sea;
 Earth and the sea feed air; the air those fires
 Ethereal; and as lowest first the moon;
 Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurg'd
 Vapours not yet into her substance turn'd. 420
 Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale
 From her moist continent to higher orbs.
 The sun, that light imparts to all, receives
 From all his alimential recompence
 In humid exhalations, and at even 425
 Sups with the ocean. Though in heaven the trees
 Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines
 Yield nectar; tho' from off the boughs each morn
 We brush mellifluous dews, and find the ground
 Cover'd with pearly grain; yet God hath here 430
 Varied his bounty so with new delights,
 As may compare with heaven; and to taste
 Think not I shall be nice. So down they sat,
 And to their viands fell; nor seemingly
 The angel, nor in mist, the common gloss 435

⁴²² *moist*] Marino's *Sl. of the Innocents*, lib. ii. st. xcv.

'From the cold frost of that *moist orbe* secure.'

In *Hamlet*, act i. s. 1. the moon is called '*moist star*.'

Todd.

⁴²⁶ *Sups*] Lovelace's *Post. Poems*, p. 15.

'The sun *sups* with the deep.' *Todd.*

⁴³⁰ *trees*] See Merrick's *Triphiodorus*, ver. 252.

Of theologians, but with keen dispatch
 Of real hunger, and concoctive heat
 To transubstantiate: what redounds, transpires
 Through spirits with ease; nor wonder; if by fire
 Of sooty coal the empyric alchymist 440
 Can turn, or holds it possible to turn,
 Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold
 As from the mine. Mean while at table Eve
 Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups
 With pleasant liquors crown'd. O innocence 445
 Deserving Paradise! if ever, then,
 Then had the sons of GOD excuse to have been
 Enamour'd at that sight; but in those hearts
 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy
 Was understood, the injur'd lover's hell. 450

Thus when with meats and drinks they had
 suffic'd,

Not burden'd nature, sudden mind arose
 In Adam, not to let th' occasion pass,
 Given him by this great conference, to know
 Of things above his world, and of their being 455
 Who dwell in heaven, whose excellence he saw
 Transcend his own so far; whose radiant forms,
 Divine effulgence, whose high power so far
 Exceeded human; and his wary speech
 Thus to th' empyreal minister he fram'd. 460

Inhabitant with GOD, now know I well
 Thy favour, in this honour done to man,

⁴⁴⁸ *mine*] 'Mint.' *Bentl. MS.*

⁴⁵⁵ *his*] Tickell, Fenton. Bently, read 'this' corruptly.

Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsaf'd
 To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,
 Food not of angels, yet accepted so, 485
 As that more willingly thou could'st not seem
 At heaven's high feasts to have fed : yet what
 compare ?

To whom the winged Hierarch reply'd.
 O Adam, one Almighty is, from whom
 All things proceed, and up to him return, 490
 If not deprav'd from good, created all
 Such to perfection, one first matter all,
 Indu'd with various forms, various degrees
 Of substance, and, in things that live, of life :
 But more refin'd, more spirituous, and pure, 495
 As nearer to him plac'd, or nearer tending,
 Each in their several active spheres assign'd,
 Till body up to spirit work, in bounds
 Proportion'd to each kind. So from the root
 Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the
 leaves 499

More aery, last the bright consummate flower
 Spirits odorous breathes ; flowers and their fruit,
 Man's nourishment, by gradual scale sublim'd,
 To vital spirits aspire, to animal,
 To intellectual ; give both life and sense, 505
 Fancy and understanding ; whence the soul
 Reason receives, and reason is her being,
 Discursive or intuitive ; discourse

⁴⁸² *odorous*] So Marino's SL. of the Inn. by T. R. p. 60.
 ' The hills, and dales that plants *odorous* bore.' Todd.

Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,
 Differing but in degree, of kind the same. 400
 Wonder not then, what GOD for you saw good
 If I refuse not, but convert, as you,
 To proper substance : time may come, when men
 With angels may participate, and find
 No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare : 405
 And from these corporal nutriments perhaps
 Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,
 Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend
 Ethereal, as we, or may at choice
 Here or in heavenly paradises dwell ; 500
 If ye be found obedient, and retain
 Unalterably firm his love entire,
 Whose progeny you are. Mean while enjoy
 Your fill what happiness this happy state
 Can comprehend, incapable of more. 505
 To whom the patriarch of mankind replied.
 O favourable spirit, propitious guest,
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct
 Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set
 From centre to circumference, whereon 510
 In contemplation of created things
 By steps we may ascend to GOD. But say,
 What meant that caution join'd, if ye be found
 Obedient ? Can we want obedience then
 To him, or possibly his love desert, 515
 Who form'd us from the dust and plac'd us here
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
 Human desires can seek or apprehend ?

To whom the angel. Son of heav'n and earth
 Attend : that thou art happy, owe to GOD ; 530
 That thou continu'st such, owe to thyself,
 That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.
 This was that caution giv'n thee ; be advis'd.
 GOD made thee perfect, not immutable ;
 And good he made thee, but to persevere 535
 He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will
 By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate
 Inextricable, or strict necessity :
 Our voluntary service he requires,
 Not our necessitated, such with him 540
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find ; for how
 Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must
 By destiny, and can no other choose ?
 Myself and all th' angelic host, that stand 545
 In sight of GOD enthron'd, our happy state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;
 On other surety none ; freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will
 To love or not ; in this we stand or fall. 550
 And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
 And so from heaven to deepest hell : O fall
 From what high state of bliss into what woe !
 To whom our great progenitor. Thy words
 Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 555
 Divine instructor, I have heard, than when
 Cherubic songs by night from neighbouring hills
 Aereal music send : nor knew I not

Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,
Differing but in degree, of kind the same. 400
Wonder not then, what GOD for you saw good
If I refuse not, but convert, as you,
To proper substance : time may come, when men
With angels may participate, and find
No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare : 405
And from these corporal nutriments perhaps
Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,
Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend
Ethereal, as we, or may at choice
Here or in heavenly paradises dwell ; 500
If ye be found obedient, and retain
Unalterably firm his love entire,
Whose progeny you are. Mean while enjoy
Your fill what happiness this happy state
Can comprehend, incapable of more. 505
To whom the patriarch of mankind replied.
O favourable spirit, propitious guest,
Well hast thou taught the way that might direct
Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set
From centre to circumference, whereon 510
In contemplation of created things
By steps we may ascend to GOD. But say,
What meant that caution join'd, if ye be found
Obedient ? Can we want obedience then
To him, or possibly his love desert, 515
Who form'd us from the dust and plac'd us here
Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
Human desires can seek or apprehend ?

To whom the angel. Son of heav'n and earth
 Attend : that thou art happy, owe to GOD ; 520
 That thou continu'st such, owe to thyself,
 That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.
 This was that caution giv'n thee ; be advis'd.
 GOD made thee perfect, not immutable ;
 And good he made thee, but to persevere 525
 He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will
 By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate
 Inextricable, or strict necessity :
 Our voluntary service he requires,
 Not our necessitated, such with him 530
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find ; for how
 Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must
 By destiny, and can no other choose ?
 Myself and all th' angelic host, that stand 535
 In sight of GOD enthron'd, our happy state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;
 On other surety none ; freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will
 To love or not ; in this we stand or fall. 540
 And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
 And so from heaven to deepest hell : O fall
 From what high state of bliss into what woe !
 To whom our great progenitor. Thy words
 Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 545
 Divine instructor, I have heard, than when
 Cherubic songs by night from neighbouring hills
 Aereal music send : nor knew I not

Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,
 Differing but in degree, of kind the same. 490
 Wonder not then, what GOD for you saw good
 If I refuse not, but convert, as you,
 To proper substance : time may come, when men
 With angels may participate, and find
 No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare : 495
 And from these corporal nutriments perhaps
 Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,
 Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend
 Ethereal, as we, or may at choice
 Here or in heavenly paradises dwell ; 500
 If ye be found obedient, and retain
 Unalterably firm his love entire,
 Whose progeny you are. Mean while enjoy
 Your fill what happiness this happy state
 Can comprehend, incapable of more. 505
 To whom the patriarch of mankind replied.
 O favourable spirit, propitious guest,
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct
 Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set
 From centre to circumference, whereon 510
 In contemplation of created things
 By steps we may ascend to GOD. But say,
 What meant that caution join'd, if ye be found
 Obedient ? Can we want obedience then
 To him, or possibly his love desert, 515
 Who form'd us from the dust and plac'd us here
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
 Human desires can seek or apprehend ?

To whom the angel. Son of heav'n and earth
 Attend : that thou art happy, owe to GOD ; 530
 That thou continu'st such, owe to thyself,
 That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.
 This was that caution giv'n thee ; be advis'd.
 GOD made thee perfect, not immutable ;
 And good he made thee, but to persevere 535
 He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will
 By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate
 Inextricable, or strict necessity :
 Our voluntary service he requires,
 Not our necessitated, such with him 540
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find ; for how
 Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must
 By destiny, and can no other choose ?
 Myself and all th' angelic host, that stand 545
 In sight of GOD enthron'd, our happy state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;
 On other surety none ; freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will
 To love or not ; in this we stand or fall. 550
 And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
 And so from heaven to deepest hell : O fall
 From what high state of bliss into what woe !

To whom our great progenitor. Thy words
 Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 555
 Divine instructor, I have heard, than when
 Cherubic songs by night from neighbouring hills
 Aereal music send : nor knew I not

To be both will and deed created free ;
 Yet that we never shall forget to love 550
 Our maker, and obey him whose command
 Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts
 Assur'd me, and still assure : though what thou tell'st
 Hath past in heav'n, some doubt within me move,
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent, 555
 The full relation, which must needs be strange,
 Worthy of sacred silence to be heard ;
 And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun
 Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins
 His other half in the great zone of heaven. 560

Thus Adam made request, and Raphael,
 After short pause, assenting thus began.

High matter thou enjoin'st me, O prime of men,
 Sad task and hard ; for how shall I relate
 To human sense th' invisible exploits 565
 Of warring spirits ? how without remorse
 The ruin of so many, glorious once
 And perfect while they stood ? how last unfold
 The secrets of another world, perhaps
 Not lawful to reveal ? yet for thy good, 570
 This is dispens'd, and what surmounts the reach
 Of human sense I shall delineate so,
 By lik'ning spiritual to corporal forms,
 As may express them best ; though what if earth
 Be but the shadow of heaven ; and things therein
 Each to other like, more than on earth is thought ?

567 *sacred*] Hor. Od. ii. 18. 29.

'Utrumque sacro digna silentio.' *Richardson.*

As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild
 Reign'd where these heavens now roll, where earth
 now rests

Upon her centre pois'd, when on a day,
 For time, though in eternity, apply'd 580
 To motion, measures all things durable
 By present, past, and future; on such day [host
 As heav'n's great year brings forth, th' empyreal
 Of angels, by imperial summons call'd,
 Innumerable before th' Almighty's throne 585
 Forthwith from all the ends of heaven appear'd,
 Under their hierarchs in orders bright,
 Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanc'd,
 Standards and gonfalons twixt van and rear
 Stream in the air, and for distinction serve 590
 Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees:
 Or in their glittering tissues bear emblaz'd
 Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love
 Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs
 Of circuit inexpressible they stood, 595
 Orb within orb, the Father infinite,
 By whom in bliss embosom'd sat the Son,
 Amidst as from a flaming mount, whose top
 Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.

Hear all ye Angels, progeny of light, 600
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues,
 Powers,

579 *pois'd*] Ov. Met. 1. 18. 'Ponderibus librata suis.'

Newton.

601 *Thrones*] 'By all the Thrones, and Dominations, Vir-

Hear my decree, which unrevok'd shall stand.
 This day I have begot whom I declare
 My only Son, and on this holy hill
 Him have anointed, whom ye now behold 605
 At my right hand ; your head I him appoint ;
 And by my Self have sworn to him shall bow
 All knees in heaven, and shall confess him Lord.
 Under his great vice-gerent reign abide
 United, as one individual soul, 610
 For ever happy : him who disobeys,
 Me disobeys, breaks union, and, that day
 Cast out from GOD and blessed vision, falls
 Into utter darkness, deep ingulf'd, his place
 Ordain'd without redemption, without end. 615
 So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words
 All seem'd well pleas'd ; all seem'd, but were not all.
 That day, as other solemn days, they spent
 In song and dance about the sacred hill ;
 Mystical dance, which yonder starry sphere 620
 Of planets and of fix'd in all her wheels
 Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,
 Eccentric, intervolv'd, yet regular
 Then most, when most irregular they seem ;
 And in their motions harmony divine 625
 So smooths her charming tones, that GOD's own ear
 Listens delighted. Ev'ning now approach'd,

tues, and Powers, and mighty hierarchies.' See Stafford's
Niobe dissolv'd into a Nilus, 1611, p. 17. See also Greene's
Hist. of Friar Bacon, p. 36 ; and Sir D. Lindsay's *Works*, ed.
 Chalmers, vol. i. p. 215 — 6.

For we have also our ev'ning and our morn,
 We ours for change delectable, not need:
 Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn ⁶³⁰
 Desirous ; all in circles as they stood,
 Tables are set, and on a sudden pil'd
 With angels' food, and rubied nectar flows,
 In pearl, in diamond, and massy gold ;
 Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of heaven. ⁶³⁵
 On flowers repos'd and with fresh flowrets crown'd,
 They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet
 Quaff immortality and joy, secure
 Of surfeit where full measure only bounds
 Excess, before th' all-bounteous King, who shower'd
 With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy. ⁶⁴¹
 Now when ambrosial night with clouds exhal'd
 From that high mount of GOD, whence light and
 shade [changed
 Spring both, the face of brightest heaven had
 To grateful twilight, for night comes not there ⁶⁴⁵
 In darker veil, and roseate dews dispos'd
 All but the unsleeping eyes of GOD to rest,
 Wide over all the plain, and wider far

⁶³⁸ *rubied*] Nectar of the colour of rubies. Hom. Il. xix.
 88, νέκταρ ἐρυθρόν. *Newton*.

⁶³⁷ In the first ed. the passage stood thus:
 'They eat, they drink, and with refection sweet
 Are filled, before the all-bounteous King,' &c.

Newton.

⁶⁴² *ambrosial*] Hom. Il. ii. 57. Ἀμβροσίην διὰ νύκτα.

Newton.

⁶⁴⁶ *roseate*] roscid. *Benl MS.*

Than all this globous earth in plain out spread,
 Such are the courts of GOD, th' angelic throng ⁶⁶⁰
 Dispers'd in bands and files their camp extend
 By living streams among the trees of life,
 Pavilions numberless and sudden rear'd,
 Celestial tabernacles, where they slept [course
 Fann'd with cool winds, save those who in their
 Melodious hymns about the sov'reign throne
 Alternate all night long. But not so wak'd
 Satan; so call him now, his former name
 Is heard no more in heaven; he of the first,
 If not the first arch-angel, great in power, ⁶⁶⁵
 In favor and preeminence, yet fraught
 With envy against the Son of GOD, that day
 Honour'd by his great Father, and proclaim'd
 Messiah King anointed, could not bear [pair'd.
 Thro' pride that sight, and thought himself im-
 Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,
 Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour,
 Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolv'd
 With all his legions to dislodge, and leave
 Unworship'd, unbey'd, the throne supreme, ⁶⁷⁰
 Contemptuous, and his next subordinate
 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake. [close
 Sleep'st thou, companion dear? What sleep can
 Thy eyelids? and remember'st what decree

⁶⁶⁰ *globous earth*] So in the Doctrine of Divorce, p. 208, ed. Burnet. 'Circling upwards can make from the *globy sea* whereon she stands.'

⁶⁷⁸ *Sleep'st thou*] See Nonni Dionysiaca, lib. xxix. v. 335.

Of yesterday so late hath past the lips 675
Of heav'n's Almighty? Thou to me thy thoughts
Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart :
Both waking we were one ; how then can now
Thy sleep dissent ? new laws thou see'st impos'd ;
New laws from him who reigns new minds may raise
In us who serve, new counsels, to debate 681
What doubtful may ensue ; more in this place
To utter is not safe. Assemble thou
Of all those myriads which we lead the chief ;
Tell them, that by command, ere yet dim night 685
Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste,
And all who under me their banners wave,
Homeward with flying march, where we possess
The quarters of the north, there to prepare
Fit entertainment to receive our King 690
The great Messiah, and his new commands ;
Who speedily through all the hierarchies
Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws.
So spake the false arch-angel, and infus'd
Bad influence into th' unwary breast 695
Of his associate ; he together calls,
Or several one by one, the regent powers,
Under him regent ; tells, as he was taught,
That, the Most High commanding, now ere night,
Now ere dim night had disincumber'd heaven, 700
The great hierarchal standard was to move ;
Tells the suggested cause, and casts between
Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound
Or taint integrity : but all obey'd

The wonted signal, and superior voice 708
 Of their great potentate; for great indeed
 His name, and high was his degree in heaven;
 His count'nance, as the morning star that guides
 The starry flock, allur'd them, and with lies
 Drew after him the third part of heaven's host. 710

Mean while th' eternal Eye, whose sight discerns
 Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy mount,
 And from within the golden lamps that burn
 Nightly before him, saw without their light
 Rebellion rising, saw in whom, how spread 715
 Among the sons of morn, what multitudes
 Were banded to oppose his high decree;
 And smiling to his only Son thus said.

Son, thou in whom my glory I behold 720
 In full resplendence, heir of all my might,
 Nearly it now concerns us to be sure
 Of our omnipotence, and with what arms
 We mean to hold what anciently we claim
 Of deity or empire; such a foe
 Is rising, who intends to erect his throne 725
 Equal to ours, throughout the spacious north;
 Nor so content, hath in his thought to try

⁷⁰⁸ *morning star*] So in an Epigram of the elder Scaliger,
Poemata, p. 120, ed. 1591;

'Lucifer, aurati pecoris cordate magister,
 Coge gregem.' A. Dyce.

⁷¹⁶ *sons of morn*] So he calls the angels in H. on the Nati-
 vity, st. xii.

'But when of old the *sons of morning* sung.'

See Isaiah, xiv. 12. *Todd.*

In battle, what our power is, or our right.
 Let us advise, and to this hazard draw
 With speed what force is left, and all employ 730
 In our defence, lest unawares we lose
 This our high place, our sanctuary, our hill.

To whom the Son with calm aspect and clear
 Light'ning divine, ineffable, serene,
 Made answer. Mighty Father, thou thy foes 735
 Justly hast in derision, and secure
 Laugh'st at their vain designs and tumults vain,
 Matter to me of glory, whom their hate
 Illustrates, when they see all regal power
 Given me to quell their pride, and in event 740
 Know whether I be dextrous to subdue
 Thy rebels, or be found the worst in heaven.

So spake the Son : but Satan with his powers
 Far was advanc'd on winged speed, an host
 Innumerable as the stars of night, 745
 Or stars of morning, dewdrops, which the sun
 Impearls on every leaf and every flower.
 Regions they pass'd, the mighty regencies
 Of Seraphim, and Potentates, and Thrones
 In their triple degrees, regions to which 750
 All thy dominion, Adam, is no more
 Than what this garden is to all the earth,
 And all the sea, from one entire globose

⁷⁴⁶ *stars of morning*] Casimir Sarb. Carm. il. 4. 1. calls the
 dews, 'Stellulae noctis decedentis.'

⁷⁴⁷ *Impearls*] Sylv. Du Bartas, p. 70.

—— 'the flowery meads

Impearled with tears, which sweet Aurora sheds. Todd.

Stretch'd into longitude ; which having pass'd,
 At length into the limits of the north 765
 They came, and Satan to his royal seat
 High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount
 Rais'd on a mount, with pyramids and tow'rs
 From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold,
 The palace of great Lucifer ; so call 769
 That structure in the dialect of men
 Interpreted, which not long after he,
 Affecting all equality with God,
 In imitation of that mount whereon
 Messiah was declar'd in sight of heaven, 773
 The mountain of the congregation call'd ;
 For thither he assembled all his train,
 Pretending so commanded to consult
 About the great reception of their king,
 Thither to come, and with calumnious art 777
 Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears.

Thrones, dominations, principedoms, virtues,
 If these magnific titles yet remain [powers,
 Not merely titular, since by decree
 Another now hath to himself ingross'd 779
 All power, and us eclips'd under the name
 Of king anointed, for whom all this haste
 Of midnight march and hurry'd meeting here,
 This only to consult how we may best
 With what may be devis'd of honours new 783
 Receive him, coming to receive from us
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile,
 Too much to one, but double how endur'd,
 To one and to his image now proclaim'd !

But what if better counsels might erect 785
 Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke?
 Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend
 The supple knee? ye will not, if I trust
 To know ye right, or if ye know yourselves
 Natives and sons of heaven, possess before 790
 By none, and if not equal all, yet free,
 Equally free; for orders and degrees
 Jar not with liberty, but well consist.
 Who can in reason then or right assume
 Monarchy over such as live by right 795
 His equals, if in power and splendour less,
 In freedom equal? or can introduce
 Law and edict on us, who without law
 Err not? much less for this to be our Lord,

⁷⁸⁸ *knee*] Shakesp. Richard II. act i. scene iv.

'And had the tribute of his *supple knee*.' Todd.

⁷⁹⁰ *much less*] This passage is considered as one of the most difficult in Milton. Bentley, Pearce, Richardson, Greenwood, Warburton, and Newton, have given their different interpretations. I differ from them, as they carry back the force of 'much less' to what has past. I consider one argument concluded at 'err not,' and that 'much less,' beginning a new one, looks forward; and I thus explain it: 'Much less reason has he to be called our Lord, and consequently to look for adoration from us, when it must be at the expense, or abuse of those imperial titles which in themselves assert our own sovereignty, and our consequent immunity from servitude.' He alludes to the titles given the angels. 'Thrones, dominations, principedoms,' &c. this argument Abdiel answers, v. 881. I trust that this explanation will be considered as satisfactory.

⁷⁹⁰ *for this*] for. This. Iste. Bentl. MS.

And look for adoration to th' abuse 800
Of those imperial titles, which assert
Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve !

Thus far his bold discourse without control
Had audience, when among the seraphim
Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal ador'd 805
The Deity, and divine commands obey'd,
Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe
The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

O argument blasphemous, false, and proud !
Words which no ear ever to hear in heaven 810
Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate,
In place thyself so high above thy peers.
Canst thou with impious obloquy condemn
The just decree of GOD, pronounc'd and sworn,
That to his only Son, by right endu'd 815
With regal sceptre, every soul in heaven
Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due
Confess him rightful king ? unjust thou say'st,
Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free,
And equal over equals to let reign, 820
One over all with unsucceeded power.
Shalt thou give law to GOD ? shalt thou dispute
With him the points of liberty, who made
Thee what thou art, and form'd the pow'rs of heaven
Such as he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd their being ?
Yet by experience taught we know how good,
And of our good, and of our dignity
How provident he is, how far from thought
To make us less, bent rather to exalt

Our happy state under one head more near 300
 United. But to grant it thee unjust,
 That equal over equals monarch reign :
 Thyself though great and glorious dost thou count,
 Or all angelic nature join'd in one,
 Equal to him begotten Son, by whom 305
 As by his word the mighty Father made
 All things, ev'n thee, and all the spirits of heaven
 By him created in their bright degrees,
 Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory nam'd
 Thrones, dominations, principedoms, virtues, powers,
 Essential powers, nor by his reign obscur'd, 311
 But more illustrious made, since he the head
 One of our number thus reduc'd becomes,
 His laws our laws, all honour to him done
 Returns our own? Cease then this impious rage,
 And tempt not these ; but hasten to appease 316
 Th' incensed Father, and th' incensed Son,
 While pardon may be found in time besought.
 So spake the fervent angel ; but his zeal
 None seconded, as out of season judg'd, 320
 Or singular and rash ; whereat rejoic'd
 Th' Apostate, and more haughty thus reply'd.
 That we were form'd then say'st thou ? and the
 Of secondary hands, by task transferr'd [work
 From Father to his Son ? strange point and new !
 Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd :
 who saw
 When this creation was ? remember'st thou
 Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being ?

We know no time when we were not as now ;
 Know none before us, self-begot, self-rai'd 880
 By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course
 Had circled his full orb, the birth mature
 Of this our native heaven, ethereal sons.
 Our puissance is our own, our own right hand
 Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try 885
 Who is our equal : then thou shalt behold
 Whether by supplication we intend
 Address, and to begirt th' Almighty throne
 Beseeching or besieging. This report,
 These tidings carry to th' anointed king ; 890
 And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.

He said, and, as the sound of waters deep,
 Hoarse murmur echo'd to his words applause
 Through the infinite host ; nor less for that
 The flaming seraph fearless, though alone 895
 Encompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold.

O alienate from GOD, O spirit accurst,
 Forsaken of all good, I see thy fall
 Determin'd, and thy hapless crew involv'd
 In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread 900
 Both of thy crime and punishment. Henceforth
 No more be troubled how to quit the yoke
 Of GOD'S MESSIAH ; those indulgent laws

889 *Beseeching*] See Heywood's *Spider and Flie*, p. 376.

'Myne answer is, not a harnes cap-a-pie
 Besieging (stead of beseeching).'

895 *flaming*] 'Each flaming seraph.'
 v. Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. xxix. st. 184.

Will not be now vouchsaf'd, other decrees
 Against thee are gone forth without recall: 885
 That golden sceptre which thou didst reject
 Is now an iron rod, to bruise and break
 Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise;
 Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly
 These wicked tents devoted, lest the wrath 890
 Impendent raging into sudden flame
 Distinguish not; for soon expect to feel
 His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.
 Then who created thee lamenting learn,
 When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know. 895
 So spake the seraph Abdiel, faithful found,
 Among the faithless faithful only he:
 Among innumerable false unmov'd,
 Unshaken, uneduc'd, untterrify'd,
 His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal; 900
 Nor number, nor example with him wrought
 To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind
 Though single. From amidst them forth he pass'd,
 Long way through hostile scorn, which he sustain'd
 Superior, nor of violence fear'd aught; 905
 And with retorted scorn his back he turn'd
 On those proud tow'rs to swift destruction doom'd.

⁸⁸⁸ *Thy disobedience*] These disobedient, v. 2. 702, b. 139, b. 687. *Bentl. MS.*

⁸⁹⁰ *lest.*] The construction is deficient. Pearce would understand, 'but I fly' before 'lest.' Bentley proposes reading,

'These wicked tents devote, *but* lest the wrath,' &c.

Newton.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VI.

ARGUMENT.

RAPHAEL continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his angels. The first fight described: Satan and his powers retire under night: he calls a council, invents devilish engines, which in the second day's fight put Michael and his angels to some disorder; but they at length pulling up mountains overwhelmed both the force and machines of Satan; yet the tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserved the glory of that victory. He in the power of his Father coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them unable to resist towards the wall of heaven; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepared for them in the deep. Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

ALL night the dreadless angel unpursu'd [morn,
Through heaven's wide champain held his way, till
Wak'd by the circling hours, with rosy hand
Unbarr'd the gates of light. There is a cave
Within the mount of GOD, fast by his throne,
Where light and darkness in perpetual round
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through
heaven

⁷ *Lodge*] This thought borrowed from Hesiod. Theog. 748.
Newton.

Grateful vicissitude, like day and night :
 Light issues forth, and at the other door
 Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour 10
 To veil the heaven, though darkness there might well
 Seem twilight here ; and now went forth the morn
 Such as in highest heaven, array'd in gold
 Empyreal ; from before her vanish'd night,
 Shot through with orient beams : when all the plain
 Cover'd with thick embattled squadrons bright, 15
 Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,
 Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view.
 War he perceiv'd, war in procinct, and found
 Already known what he for news had thought 20
 To have reported : gladly then he mix'd
 Among those friendly powers, who him receiv'd
 With joy and acclamations loud, that one,
 That of so many myriads fall'n yet one
 Return'd not lost. On to the sacred hill 25
 They led him high applauded, and present
 Before the seat supreme ; from whence a voice
 From midst a golden cloud thus mild was heard.
 Servant of God, well done, well hast thou fought
 The better fight, who single hast maintain'd 30
 Against revolted multitudes the cause
 Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms ;
 And for the testimony of truth hast borne
 Universal reproach, far worse to bear

¹⁰ *Obsequious*] opaque. *Bentl. MS.*

¹⁴ *vanish'd*] Some editions absurdly read 'vanquish'd.'

Newton.

Than violence: for this was all thy care, 35
 To stand approv'd in sight of God, though worlds
 Judg'd thee perverse. The easier conquest now
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,
 Back on thy foes more glorious to return
 Than scorn'd thou didst depart, and to subdue 40
 By force, who reason for their law refuse,
 Right reason for their law, and for their king
 Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.
 Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,
 And thou, in military prowess next, 45
 Gabriel, lead forth to battle these my sons
 Invincible, lead forth my armed saints
 By thousands and by millions rang'd for fight;
 Equal in number to that godless crew
 Rebellious; them with fire and hostile arms 50
 Fearless assault, and to the brow of heaven
 Pursuing drive them out from God and bliss,
 Into their place of punishment, the gulf
 Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide
 His fiery chaos to receive their fall. 55

So spake the sovereign voice, and clouds began
 To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll
 In dusky wreaths reluctant flames, the sign
 Of wrath awak'd: nor with less dread the loud
 Ethereal trumpet from on high gan blow: 60
 At which command the powers militant
 That stood for heaven, in mighty quadrate join'd

⁶⁰ *Ethereal*] Archangel. *Bentl. MS.*

Of union irresistible, mov'd on
 In silence their bright legions, to the sound
 Of instrumental harmony, that breath'd 65
 Heroic ardour to advent'rous deeds,
 Under their godlike leaders, in the cause
 Of GOD and his Messiah. On they move
 Indissolubly firm ; nor obvious hill,
 Nor strait'ning vale, nor wood, nor stream, divides 70
 Their perfect ranks ; for high above the ground
 Their march was, and the passive air upbore
 Their nimble tread ; as when the total kind
 Of birds in orderly array on wing
 Came summon'd over Eden to receive 75
 Their names of thee : so over many a tract
 Of heaven they march'd, and many a province wide
 Tenfold the length of this terrene. At last
 Far in th' horizon to the north appear'd
 From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretch'd 80
 In battailous aspect, and nearer view
 Bristled with upright beams innumerable
 Of rigid spears, and helmets throng'd, and shields
 Various, with boastful argument portray'd,
 The banded powers of Satan hasting on 85
 With furious expedition ; for they ween'd
 That self-same day, by fight or by surprise,
 To win the mount of GOD, and on his throne
 To set the envier of his state, the proud
 Aspirer ; but their thoughts prov'd fond and vain 90

⁸² *Bristled*] Virg. *Æn.* xi. 601. 'Tum late ferreus hastis
 horret ager.' *Newton.*

In the mid way: though strange to us it seem'd
 At first, that angel should with angel war,
 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet
 So oft in festivals of joy and love
 Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire, 95
 Hymning th' eternal Father; but the shout
 Of battle now began, and rushing sound
 Of onset ended soon each milder thought.
 High in the midst exalted as a god
 Th' apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat, 100
 Idol of majesty divine, enclos'd
 With flaming cherubim and golden shields:
 Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now
 Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,
 A dreadful interval, and front to front 105
 Presented stood in terrible array
 Of hideous length: before the cloudy van,
 On the rough edge of battle ere it join'd,
 Satan, with vast and haughty strides advanc'd,
 Came towering, arm'd in adamant and gold: 110
 Abdiel that sight endur'd not, where he stood
 Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,
 And thus his own undaunted heart explores.

O heaven! that such resemblance of the Highest
 Should yet remain, where faith and realty 115

⁹⁸ *hosting*] Johnson has cited this unusual word from Spenser on Ireland. 'Leading of their own followers to the general *hostings*.'

¹⁰⁵ *dreadful interval*] 'a needful counterview.'

Remain not ; wherefore should not strength and
might

There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove
Where boldest, though to sight unconquerable ?
His puissance, trusting in th' Almighty's aid,
I mean to try, whose reason I have try'd 120
Unsound and false ; nor is it aught but just,
That he, who in debate of truth hath won,
Should win in arms, in both disputes alike
Victor : though brutish that contest and foul,
When reason hath to deal with force, yet so 125
Most reason is that reason overcome.

So pondering, and, from his armed peers
Forth stepping opposite, half way he met
His daring foe, at this prevention more
Incens'd, and thus securely him defied. [reach'd

Proud, art thou met ? thy hope was to have
The height of thy aspiring unoppos'd,
The throne of GOD unguarded, and his side
Abandon'd at the terror of thy power
Or potent tongue ; fool, not to think how vain 135
Against th' Omnipotent to rise in arms ;
Who out of smallest things could without end
Have rais'd incessant armies to defeat
Thy folly ; or, with solitary hand
Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow 140
Unaided could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd
Thy legions under darkness : but thou seest
All are not of thy train ; there be, who faith
Prefer and piety to GOD ; though then

To thee not visible, when I alone 145
 Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent
 From all: my sect thou seest; now learn too late
 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.

Whom the grand foe, with scornful eye askance,
 Thus answer'd, Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour
 Of my revenge, first sought for thou return'st 151
 From flight, seditious angel, to receive
 Thy merited reward, the first assay
 Of this right hand provok'd, since first that tongue
 Inspir'd with contradiction durst oppose 155
 A third part of the gods, in synod met
 Their deities to assert, who, while they feel
 Vigour divine within them, can allow
 Omnipotence to none. But well thou com'st
 Before thy fellows, ambitious to win 160
 From me some plume, that thy success may show
 Destruction to the rest: this pause between,
 Unanswer'd lest thou boast, to let thee know,
 At first I thought that liberty and heaven
 To heavenly souls had been all one; but now 165
 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
 Minist'ring spirits, train'd up in feast and song:
 Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of heaven,
 Servility with freedom to contend,
 As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove.

To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern reply'd. 171
 Apostate, still thou err'st, nor end wilt find
 Of erring, from the path of truth remote:
 Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name

Of servitude to serve whom GOD ordains, 175
 Or Nature ; GOD and Nature bid the same,
 When he who rules is worthiest, and excels
 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,
 To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebell'd
 Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee, 180
 Thyself not free, but to thyself enthrall'd ;
 Yet lewdly dar'st our minist'ring upbraid.
 Reign thou in hell thy kingdom, let me serve
 In heaven GOD ever bless'd, and his divine
 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd ; 185
 Yet chains in hell, not realms expect : mean while
 From me return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,
 This greeting on thy impious crest receive.

So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,
 Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell 190
 On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight,
 Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield
 Such ruin intercept : ten paces huge
 He back recoil'd ; the tenth on bended knee
 His massy spear upstay'd ; as if on earth 195
 Winds under ground or waters, forcing way
 Side-long, had push'd a mountain from his seat,
 Half sunk with all his pines. Amazement seiz'd

188 *greeting*] Virg. *Æn.* ix. 685.

'Bis capti Phryges hæc Rutulis responsa remittunt.'

Newton.

189 *a noble*] v. Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. vi. st. 90.

'A noble stroke it was.'

197 *mountain*] Q. Smyrnsæus says, that Achilles fell,
ἀλγίκιος ὄρει μακρῷ. V. iii, 176. *A. Dyce.*

The rebel thrones, but greater rage to see
Thus foil'd their mightiest; ours joy fill'd, and shout,
Presage of victory, and fierce desire 201
Of battle: whereat Michael bid sound
The arch-angel trumpet; through the vast of heaven
It sounded, and the faithful armies rung
Hosanna to the Highest: nor stood at gaze 205
The adverse legions, nor less hideous join'd
The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,
And clamour, such as heard in heaven till now
Was never; arms on armour clashing bray'd
Horrible discord, and the madding wheels 210
Of brazen chariots rag'd; dire was the noise
Of conflict; over head the dismal hiss
Of fiery darts in flaming volleys flew,
And flying vaulted either host with fire.
So under fiery cope together rush'd 215
Both battles main, with ruinous assault
And inextinguishable rage; all heaven
Resounded, and had earth been then, all earth
Had to her centre shook. What wonder? when
Millions of fierce encount'ring angels fought 220
On either side, the least of whom could wield
These elements, and arm him with the force
Of all their regions: how much more of power
Army against army numberless to raise
Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb, 225
Though not destroy, their happy native seat;
Had not the eternal King omnipotent
From his strong hold of heaven high overrul'd

And limited their might ; though number'd such,
 As each divided legion might have seem'd 230
 A numerous host ; in strength each armed hand
 A legion ; led in fight, yet leader seem'd
 Each warrior single as in chief, expert
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
 Of battle, open when, and when to close 235
 The ridges of grim war ; no thought of flight,
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed
 That argu'd fear ; each on himself rely'd,
 As only in his arm the moment lay
 Of victory : deeds of eternal fame 240
 Were done, but infinite ; for wide was spread
 That war and various ; sometimes on firm ground
 A standing fight ; then soaring on main wing
 Tormented all the air ; all air seem'd then
 Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale 245
 The battle hung ; till Satan, who that day
 Prodigious power had shown, and met in arms
 No equal, ranging through the dire attack
 Of fighting seraphim confus'd, at length
 Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and fell'd
 Squadrons at once ; with huge two-handed sway
 Brandish'd aloft the horrid edge came down

²⁴⁴ *Tormented*] Tempested. *Benil. MS.*

Lod. Bryskett's M. Muse of Thestylis.

'Who, letting loose the winds,
Tost, and tormented the air.' *Newton.*

²⁴⁵ *even scale*] v. Eurip. Suppl. v. 706. Tasso, G. Lib.
 can.xx.st. 50. Spens. F. Qu. iv. iii. 37. *Todd.*

Wide wasting: such destruction to withstand
He hasted, and oppos'd the rocky orb
Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield, 255
A vast circumference. At his approach
The great arch-angel from his warlike toil
Surceas'd; and glad, as hoping here to end
Intestine war in heaven, th' arch-foe subdu'd
Or captive drag'd in chains, with hostile frown 260
And visage all inflam'd, first thus began.

Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,
Unnam'd in heaven, now plenteous as thou seest
These acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,
Though heaviest by just measure on thyself 265
And thy adherents: how hast thou disturb'd
Heaven's blessed peace, and into nature brought
Misery, uncreated till the crime
Of thy rebellion? how hast thou instill'd
Thy malice into thousands, once upright 270
And faithful, now prov'd false? But think not here
To trouble holy rest; heaven casts thee out
From all her confines: heaven the seat of bliss
Brooks not the works of violence and war.
Hence then, and evil go with thee along, 275
Thy offspring, to the place of evil, hell,
Thou and thy wicked crew; there mingle broils,
Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,
Or some more sudden vengeance wing'd from God
Precipitate thee with augmented pain. 280

So spake the prince of angels; to whom thus
The adversary. Nor think thou with wind

Of aery threats to awe whom yet with deeds
 Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these
 To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise 285
 Unvanquish'd, easier to transact with me
 That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats
 To chase me hence? err not that so shall end
 The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style
 The strife of glory: which we mean to win, 290
 Or turn this heaven itself into the hell
 Thou fablest; here however to dwell free,
 If not to reign: meanwhile thy utmost force,
 And join him nam'd Almighty to thy aid,
 I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh. 295

They ended parle, and both address'd for fight
 Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue
 Of angels, can relate, or to what things
 Liken on earth conspicuous, that may lift
 Human imagination to such height 300
 Of godlike power? for likest gods they seem'd,
 Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms,
 Fit to decide the empire of great heaven.
 Now wav'd their fiery swords, and in the air
 Made horrid circles; two broad suns their shields
 Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood 305

286 *address'd*] Spens. F. Qu. v. ii. 12.

'And streight himselfe unto the fight address.' *Todd.*

306 *expectation*] So Shakesp. Hen. V.

'For now sits *expectation* in the air.'

And Beaum. and Fletch. Boadicea, act iii. scene i.

'And *expectation* like the Roman eagle

Took stand'—

Newton. Todd.

In horror ; from each hand with speed retir'd,
 Where erst was thickest fight, th' angelic throng,
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind
 Of such commotion, such as, to set forth ⁸¹⁰
 Great things by small, if, nature's concord broke,
 Among the constellations war were sprung,
 Two planets, rushing from aspect malign
 Of fiercest opposition, in mid sky
 Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.
 Together both, with next to Almighty arm, ⁸¹⁵
 Uplifted imminent, one stroke they aim'd
 That might determine, and not need repeat,
 As not of power, at once ; nor odds appear'd
 In might or swift prevention ; but the sword ⁸²⁰
 Of Michael from the armoury of God
 Was giv'n him temper'd so, that neither keen
 Nor solid might resist that edge : it met
 The sword of Satan with steep force to smite
 Descending, and in half cut sheer ; nor stay'd, ⁸²⁵
 But with swift wheel reverse, deep ent'ring, shar'd
 All his right side ; then Satan first knew pain,
 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd ; so sore
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound

⁸¹⁷ *imminent*] Virg. *Æn.* vi. 602

'Quos super atra silex, jam jam lapsura, cadentique

Imminet assimilis.'

Newton.

⁸²⁰ *griding*] Spens. *F. Q.* ii. viii. 86.

'That through his thigh the mortal steel did *gride*.'

Newton.

⁸²⁰ *discontinuous wound*] Compare an expression of Horace.

Oceano dissociabili. Ode iii. b. i.

A. Dyce.

Pass'd thro' him, but th' ethereal substance clos'd,
Not long divisible, and from the gash 331
A stream of nectarous humor issuing flow'd
Sanguine, such as celestial spirits may bleed,
And all his armour stain'd ere while so bright.
Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run 333
By angels many and strong, who interpos'd
Defence, while others bore him on their shields
Back to his chariot; where it stood retir'd
From off the files of war: there they him laid
Gnashing for anguish, and despite, and shame, 340
To find himself not matchless, and his pride
Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath
His confidence to equal God in power.
Yet soon he heal'd; for spirits that live throughout
Vital in every part, not as frail man 345
In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins,
Cannot but by annihilating die;
Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound
Receive, no more than can the fluid air:
All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear, 350
All intellect, all sense, and as they please
They limb themselves, and colour, shape, or size
Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.

Meanwhile in other parts like deeds deserv'd
Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought, 355
And with fierce ensigns pierc'd the deep array
Of Moloch, furious king, who him defy'd,
And at his chariot wheels to drag him bound
Threaten'd, nor from the Holy One of heav'n

Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous ; but anon, 360
 Down cloven to the waist, with shatter'd arms
 And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing
 Uriel and Raphael his vaunting foe,
 Though huge, and in a rock of diamond arm'd,
 Vanquish'd, Adramelec and Asmadai, 365
 Two potent thrones, that to be less than gods
 Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their
 flight,
 Mangled with ghastly wounds thro' plate and mail.
 Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy
 The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow 370
 Ariel, and Arioc, and the violence
 Of Ramiel scorch'd and blasted, overthrew.
 I might relate of thousands, and their names
 Eternize here on earth ; but those elect
 Angels, contented with their fame in heaven, 375
 Seek not the praise of men : the other sort,
 In might though wondrous and in acts of war,
 Nor of renown less eager, yet by doom
 Cancel'd from heaven and sacred memory,
 Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell. 380
 For strength from truth divided and from just,
 Illaudable, naught merits but dispraise
 And ignominy ; yet to glory aspires

362 *uncouth*] Spen. F. Qu. i. xi. 20.

'That with the *uncouth smart* the monster *loudly cryde*.'
Thyer.

368 *plate*] Spen. F. Qu. i. vi. 48.

'With their force they perst both *plate* and *mail*.' *Todd.*

Vainglorious, and through infamy seeks fame :
Therefore eternal silence be their doom. 388

And now, their mightiest quell'd, the battle
swerv'd,

With many an inroad gor'd ; deformed rout
Enter'd and foul disorder : all the ground
With shiver'd armour strown, and on a heap
Chariot and charioteer lay overturn'd, 389
And fiery foaming steeds ; what stood, recoil'd
O'erwearied, through the faint Satanic host,
Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd,
Then first with fear surpris'd and sense of pain,
Fled ignominious, to such evil brought 395
By sin of disobedience, till that hour
Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.
Far otherwise th' inviolable saints
In cubic phalanx firm advanc'd entire,
Invulnerable, impenetrably arm'd : 400
Such high advantages their innocence
Gave them above their foes, not to have sinn'd,
Not to have disobey'd ; in fight they stood
Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd
By wound, tho' from their place by violence mov'd.
Now night her course began, and, over heaven
Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd, 407

388 *cubic*] Squared. Embodied, 779. *Bentl. MS.*

407 *Inducing*] *Hor. Sat. i. v. 9.*

————— 'Jam nox *inducere* terris
Umbras, et cælo diffundere signa parabat.'

Newton.

And silence on the odious din of war:
 Under her cloudy covert both retir'd,
 Victor and vanquish'd. On the foughthen field ⁴¹⁰
 Michael and his angels prevalent
 Encamping plac'd in guard their watches round,
 Cherubic waving fires: on th' other part
 Satan with his rebellious disappear'd,
 Far in the dark dislodg'd, and void of rest ⁴¹⁵
 His potentates to council call'd by night;
 And in the midst thus undismay'd began.

O now in danger tried, now known in arms
 Not to be overpower'd, companions dear,
 Found worthy not of liberty alone, ⁴²⁰
 Too mean pretence, but what we more affect,
 Honour, dominion, glory, and renown;
 Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight,
 And if one day why not eternal days?
 What heaven's Lord had powerfulest to send ⁴²⁵
 Against us from about his throne, and judg'd
 Sufficient to subdue us to his will,
 But proves not so: then fallible, it seems,
 Of future we may deem him, though till now
 Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd, ⁴³⁰
 Some disadvantage we endur'd and pain,
 Till now not known, but known, as soon condemn'd;

⁴¹⁰ *foughthen*] Shakesp. Hen. V.

'As in this glorious and *well foughthen* field.'

and Fletcher's *Laws of Candy*, act. iii. scene 1, 'are tales of
foughthen fields.' Todd.

Since now we find this our empyreal form
 Incapable of mortal injury,
 Imperishable, and though pierc'd with wound 438
 Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.
 Of evil then so small as easy think
 The remedy; perhaps more valid arms,
 Weapons more violent, when next we meet,
 May serve to better us, and worse our foes: 440
 Or equal what between us made the odds,
 In nature none: if other hidden cause
 Left them superior, while we can preserve
 Unhurt our minds and understanding sound,
 Due search and consultation will disclose. 445
 He sat; and in th' assembly next upstood
 Nisroc, of principalities the prime;
 As one he stood escap'd from cruel fight,
 Sore toil'd, his riven arms to havock hewn;
 And cloudy in aspect thus answering spake. 450
 Deliverer from new lords, leader to free
 Enjoyment of our right as gods; yet hard
 For gods, and too unequal work we find
 Against unequal arms to fight in pain,
 Against unpain'd, impassive; from which evil 455
 Ruin must needs ensue, for what avails
 Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with
 pain,
 Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands
 Of mightiest? sense of pleasure we may well
 Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine, 460
 But live content, which is the calmest life:

But pain is perfect misery, the worst
 Of evils, and excessive overturns
 All patience. He who therefore can invent
 With what more forcible we may offend ⁴⁶⁶
 Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm
 Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves
 No less than for deliverance what we owe.

Whereto with look compos'd Satan reply'd.
 Not uninvented that, which thou aright ⁴⁷⁰
 Believ'st so main to our success, I bring:
 Which of us who beholds the bright surface
 Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand,
 This continent of spacious heaven, adorn'd
 With plant, fruit, flow'r ambrosial, gems, and gold,
 Whose eye so superficially surveys ⁴⁷⁶
 These things, as not to mind from whence they grow
 Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,
 Of spirituous and fiery spume, till touch'd
 With heaven's ray, and temper'd they shoot forth ⁴⁸⁰
 So beauteous, op'ning to the ambient light?
 These in their dark nativity the deep
 Shall yield us pregnant with infernal flame,
 Which into hollow engines long and round
 Thick-ramm'd, at th' other bore with touch of fire
 Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth ⁴⁸⁶
 From far with thund'ring noise among our foes
 Such implements of mischief, as shall dash

⁴⁶⁷ to me] i. e. in my opinion.

⁴⁷⁸ dark] dank. *Bentl. MS.*

To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd 490
 The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.
 Nor long shall be our labour ; yet ere dawn,
 Effect shall end our wish. Mean while revive ;
 Abandon fear ; to strength and counsel join'd
 Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd. 495

He ended, and his words their drooping cheer
 Enlighten'd, and their languish'd hope reviv'd.
 Th' invention all admir'd, and each, how he
 To be th' inventor miss'd, so easy it seem'd
 Once found, which yet unfound most would have
 thought 500

Impossible : yet haply of thy race
 In future days, if malice should abound,
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd
 With dev'lish machination, might devise
 Like instrument, to plague the sons of men 505
 For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.
 Forthwith from council to the work they flew,
 None arguing stood ; innumerable hands
 Were ready ; in a moment up they turn'd
 Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath 510
 Th' originals of nature in their crude
 Conception : sulphurous and nitrous foam
 They found, they mingled, and with subtle art
 Concocted and adjusted they reduc'd
 To blackest grain, and into store convey'd. 515
 Part hidden veins digg'd up, nor hath this earth
 Entrails unlike, of mineral and stone,

Whereof to found their engines and their balls
 Of missive ruin ; part incentive reed
 Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire. 520
 So all ere day-spring, under conscious night
 Secret, they finish'd, and in order set,
 With silent circumspection unespy'd.

Now when fair morn orient in heav'n appear'd,
 Up rose the victor angels, and to arms 525
 The matin trumpet sung : in arms they stood
 Of golden panoply, refulgent host,
 Soon banded ; others from the dawning hills
 Look'd round, and scouts each coast light-armed
 scour,

Each quarter, to descry the distant foe, 530
 Where lodged, or whither fled, or if for fight,
 In motion or in halt : him soon they met
 Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow
 But firm battalion : back with speediest sail
 Zophiel, of cherubim the swiftest wing, 535
 Came flying, and in mid air aloud thus cry'd.
 Arm, warriors, arm for fight, the foe at hand,
 Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit.
 This day, fear not his flight ; so thick a cloud
 He comes, and settled in his face I see 540
 Sad resolution and secure : let each

520 *pernicious*] probably to be understood in the sense of
 the Latin *pernix*, speedy. *Newton*.

526 *matin*] Tasso *Gier. Lib. c. xi. st. 19.*

'Quando a cantar la *matutina tromba*
 Comincia All' arme.'

Thyer.

His adamantine coat gird well, and each
 Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orbed shield,
 Borne ev'n or high; for this day will pour down,
 If I conjecture aught, no drizzling show'r, 545
 But rattling storm of arrows barb'd with fire.

So warn'd he them, aware themselves, and soon
 In order, quit of all impediment;
 Instant without disturb they took alarm,
 And onward move embattled; when behold 550
 Not distant far with heavy pace the foe
 Approaching gross and huge; in hollow cube
 Training his devilish enginery, impal'd
 On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood 555
 A while; but suddenly at head appear'd
 Satan; and thus was heard commanding loud.

Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold;
 That all may see, who hate us, how we seek
 Peace and composure, and with open breast 560
 Stand ready to receive them, if they like
 Our overture, and turn not back perverse;
 But that I doubt; however witness heaven,
 Heaven witness thou anon, while we discharge
 Freely our part: ye who appointed stand 565
 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch
 What we propound, and loud that all may hear.

⁵⁴⁵ coat] Hor. Od. i. vi. 13.

'Martem tunica tectum adamantina.' Todd.

⁵⁴⁵ aught] Fenton wishes to read 'right.'

So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce
 Had ended ; when to right and left the front
 Divided, and to either flank retir'd : 570
 Which to our eyes discover'd, new and strange,
 A triple mounted row of pillars, laid
 On wheels, for like to pillars most they seem'd,
 Or hollow'd bodies made of oak or fir
 With branches lop'd, in wood or mountain fell'd, 575
 Brass, iron, stony mould, had not their mouths
 With hideous orifice gaped on us wide,
 Portending hollow truce ; at each behind
 A seraph stood, and in his hand a reed
 Stood waving tip'd with fire ; while we suspense 580
 Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd ;
 Not long, for sudden all at once their reeds
 Put forth, and to a narrow vent apply'd
 With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,
 But soon obscur'd with smoke, all heav'n appear'd,
 From those deep-throated engines belch'd, whose
 Embowel'd with outrageous noise the air, [roar
 And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul
 Their devilish glut, chain'd thunderbolts and hail
 Of iron globes, which on the victor host 585

574 *hollow'd bodies*] Pallisadoes, 488. *Bent. MS.*

580 *Stood waving*] This is certainly an error, 'stood' occurs in the line before and after. Bentley would read 'Held ;' but wishing to keep as close to the text as I can, I propose 'shone.' Mr. Dyce proposes 'shook.'

585 *belch'd*] See Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. xx. st. 103.

'But oft it gap'd and belch'd, whence-upwards broke
 Black volumes of contagious stink and smoke.'

Level'd with such impetuous fury smote,
 That whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,
 Though standing else as rocks ; but down they fell
 By thousands, angel on archangel roll'd,
 The sooner for their arms ; unarm'd they might
 Have easily as spirits evaded swift 596
 By quick contraction or remove : but now
 Foul dissipation follow'd and forc'd rout :
 Nor serv'd it to relax their serried files.
 What should they do ? if on they rush'd, repulse 600
 Repeated, and indecent overthrow
 Doubled, would render them yet more despis'd,
 And to their foes a laughter : for in view
 Stood rank'd of seraphim another row,
 In posture to displode their second tire 605
 Of thunder : back defeated to return
 They worse abhorr'd. Satan beheld their plight,
 And to his mates thus in derision call'd.

O friends, why come not on these victors proud ?
 Ere while they fierce were coming, and when we,
 To entertain them fair with open front [terms
 And breast (what could we more ?) propounded
 Of composition, straight they chang'd their minds,
 Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,
 As they would dance : yet for a dance they seem'd
 Somewhat extravagant and wild, perhaps 610
 For joy of offer'd peace : but I suppose,
 If our proposals once again were heard,
 We should compel them to a quick result.

To whom thus Belial in like gamesome mood. 620

Leader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,
 Of hard contents, and full of force urg'd home ;
 Such as we might perceive amus'd them all,
 And stumbled many ; who receives them right,
 Had need from head to foot well understand ; ⁶²⁵
 Not understood, this gift they have besides,
 They shew us when our foes walk not upright.

So they among themselves in pleasant vein
 Stood scoffing, heighten'd in their thoughts beyond
 All doubt of victory ; eternal might ⁶³⁰
 To match with their inventions they presum'd
 So easy, and of his thunder made a scorn,
 And all his host derided, while they stood
 A while in trouble ; but they stood not long ;
 Rage prompted them at length, and found them
 Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose. [arms
 Forthwith, behold the excellence, the power
 Which GOD hath in his mighty angels plac'd !
 Their arms away they threw, and to the hills,
 For earth hath this variety from heaven ⁶⁴⁰
 Of pleasure situate in hill and dale,
 Light as the light'ning glimpse they ran, they flew,
 From their foundations loos'ning to and fro
 They pluck'd the seated hills with all their load,

⁶²⁵ *understand*] This equivocation adopted from Shakespeare's *Two G. of Verona*, ii. 5.

'My staff *understands* me,' &c. *Johnson*.

⁶²⁶ *understood*] under—stoop. *Bentl. MS.*

⁶⁴² *light'ning*] See Nonni *Dionysiaca*, ii. 393, xiv. 55.

⁶⁴⁴ *pluck'd*] Compare Statii *Theb.* ii. 559.

'*Saxum ingens, quod vix plena cervice gementes*

Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops ⁶⁴⁵
 Up lifting bore them in their hands. Amaze,
 Be sure, and terror seiz'd the rebel host,
 When coming towards them so dread they saw
 The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd ;
 Till on those cursed engines triple-row ⁶⁵⁰
 They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence
 Under the weight of mountains buried deep,
 Themselves invaded next, and on their heads
 Main promontories flung, which in the air ⁶⁵⁴
 Came shadowing, and opprest whole legions arm'd ;
 Their armour help'd their harm, crush'd in and
 bruise'd

Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind
 Out of such prison, though spirits of purest light,
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown. ⁶⁶¹
 The rest in imitation to like arms
 Betook them, and the neighbouring hills uptore ;
 So hills amid the air encounter'd hills,
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire, ⁶⁶⁶
 That under ground they fought in dismal shade ;
 Infernal noise ; war seem'd a civil game
 To this uproar ; horrid confusion heap'd
 Upon confusion rose : and now all heaven
 Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread, ⁶⁷⁰
 Had not th' Almighty Father, where he sits

Vertere humo, murisque valent inferre juveni,
 Rupibus avellit: dein toto sanguine nixus
 Sustinet, &c.

Shrin'd in his sanctuary of heaven secure,
 Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen
 This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd :
 That his great purpose he might so fulfil, 673
 To honour his anointed Son aveng'd
 Upon his enemies, and to declare
 All power on him transferr'd : whence to his Son
 Th' assessor of his throne he thus began.

Effulgence of my glory, Son belov'd, 680
 Son in whose face invisible is beheld
 Visibly, what by Deity I am,
 And in whose hand what by decree I do,
 Second Omnipotence ! two days are past,
 Two days, as we compute the days of heaven, 685
 Since Michael and his powers went forth to tame
 These disobedient ; sore hath been their fight,
 As likeliest was, when two such foes met arm'd ;
 For to themselves I left them, and thou know'st,
 Equal in their creation they were form'd, 690
 Save what sin hath impair'd, which yet hath wrought
 Insensibly, for I suspend their doom ;
 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last
 Endless, and no solution will be found.
 War wearied hath perform'd what war can do, 695
 And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins, [makes
 With mountains as with weapons arm'd, which
 Wild work in heaven and dangerous to the main.
 Two days are therefore past, the third is thine ;

674 *advis'd*] A participle adverbial, and very elegant; it means advisedly, as Hor. Ode I. iii. 21. *Richardson*.

For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus far 700
 Have suffer'd, that the glory may be thine
 Of ending this great war, since none but thou
 Can end it. Into thee such virtue and grace
 Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know
 In heaven and hell thy power above compare; 705
 And this perverse commotion govern'd thus,
 To manifest thee worthiest to be heir
 Of all things, to be heir and to be king
 By sacred unction, thy deserved right.
 Go then, thou Mightiest, in thy Father's might, 710
 Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels
 That shake heaven's basis, bring forth all my war;
 My bow and thunder, my almighty arms
 Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh;
 Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out 715
 From all heaven's bounds into the utter deep:
 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise
 God and Messiah his anointed king.

He said, and on his Son with rays direct
 Shone full; he all his Father full exprest 720
 Ineffably into his face receiv'd;
 And thus the filial Godhead answering spake.

O Father, O Supreme of heavenly thrones,
 First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou always seek'st
 To glorify thy Son, I always thee, 725
 As is most just; this I my glory account,
 My exaltation, and my whole delight,
 That thou in me well pleas'd declar'st thy will
 Fulfill'd, which to fulfill is all my bliss.

Sceptre, and power, thy giving, I assume, 731
 And gladlier shall resign, when in the end
 Thou shalt be all in all, and I in thee
 For ever, and in me all whom thou lov'st:
 But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on
 Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on, 735
 Image of thee in all things; and shall soon,
 Arm'd with thy might, rid heaven of these rebell'd,
 To their prepar'd ill mansion driven down
 To chains of darkness and th' undying worm;
 That from thy just obedience could revolt, 740
 Whom to obey is happiness entire.
 Then shall thy saints unmix'd, and from th' impure
 Far separate, circling thy holy mount
 Unfained hallelujahs to thee sing,
 Hymns of high praise, and I among them chief. 745

So said, he, o'er his sceptre bowing, rose
 From the right hand of glory where he sat,
 And the third sacred morn began to shine,
 Dawning through heaven: forth rush'd with whirl-
 The chariot of paternal Deity, [wind sound
 Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn,
 Itself instinct with spirit, but convoy'd
 By four cherubic shapes; four faces each
 Had wondrous, as with stars their bodies all
 And wings were set with eyes, with eyes the wheels
 Of beryl, and careering fires between; 750
 Over their heads a crystal firmament,
 Whereon a sapphire throne, inlaid with pure

750 *Whereon*] Fenton reads 'Where, on.' Todd.

Amber, and colours of the show'ry arch.
 He, in celestial panoply all arm'd 750
 Of radiant Urim work divinely wrought,
 Ascended; at his right hand Victory
 Sate eagle-wing'd, beside him hung his bow
 And quiver with three-bolted thunder stor'd,
 And from about him fierce effusion roll'd, 755
 Of smoke, and bickering flame, and sparkles dire.
 Attended with ten thousand thousand saints
 He onward came; far off his coming shone;
 And twenty thousand, I their number heard,
 Chariots of GOD, half on each hand were seen. 760
 He on the wings of cherub rode sublime,
 On the crystalline sky, in sapphire thron'd.
 Illustrious far and wide, but by his own
 First seen; them unexpected joy surpris'd,
 When the great ensign of Messiah blaz'd, 765
 Aloft by angels borne, his sign in heaven:
 Under whose conduct Michael soon reduc'd
 His army, circumfus'd on either wing,
 Under their head embodied all in one.
 Before him power divine his way prepar'd; 770
 At his command the uprooted hills retir'd
 Each to his place; they heard his voice and went
 Obsequious; Heaven his wonted face renew'd,
 And with fresh flow'rets hill and valley smil'd.
 This saw his hapless foes, but stood obdur'd,

750 *show'ry arch*] A. Ramsæi, P. Sacr. ed. Lauder, p. 5.

'Cœlo sicut Thaumasias udo,
 Cum picturatum dat mille coloribus arcum.'

And to rebellious fight rallied their powers 795
 Insensate, hope conceiving from despair :
 In heavenly spirits could such perverseness dwell ?
 But to convince the proud what signs avail,
 Or wonders move the obdurate to relent ? 799
 They harden'd more by what might most reclaim,
 Grieving to see his glory, at the sight
 Took envy, and, aspiring to his height,
 Stood reimbattled fierce, by force or fraud
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevail 796
 Against God and Messiah, or to fall
 In universal ruin last ; and now
 To final battle drew, disdaining flight,
 Or faint retreat ; when the great Son of God
 To all his host on either hand thus spake. 800
 Stand still in bright array, ye saints ; here stand,
 Ye angels arm'd ; this day from battle rest.
 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause,
 And as ye have receiv'd, so have ye done 805
 Invincibly : but of this cursed crew
 The punishment to other hand belongs ;
 Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints :
 Number to this day's work is not ordain'd,

797 *hope*] Virg. *Æn.* ii. 354.

'Una salus victis, nullam sperare salutem.'

and Q. Curt. L. v. c. iv.

'Sæpe desperatio spei causa est.'

Newton.

797 *last*] Tickell and Bentley read 'lost.'

Nor multitude: stand only and behold 810
God's indignation on these godless pour'd
By me: not you, but me they have despis'd,
Yet envied: against me is all their rage,
Because the Father, t' whom in heaven supreme
Kingdom, and power, and glory appertains, 815
Hath honour'd me according to his will.
Therefore to me their doom he hath assign'd;
That they may have their wish, to try with me
In battle which the stronger proves, they all,
Or I alone against them; since by strength 820
They measure all, of other excellence
Not emulous, nor care who them excels;
Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.

So spake the Son, and into terror chang'd
His count'nance, too severe to be beheld 825
And full of wrath bent on his enemies.
At once the four spread out their starry wings
With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs
Of his fierce chariot roll'd, as with the sound
Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host. 830
He on his impious foes right onward drove,
Gloomy as night; under his burning wheels
The stedfast empyrean shook throughout,
All but the throne itself of God. Full soon
Among them he arriv'd, in his right hand 835
Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent
Before him, such as in their souls infix'd
Plagues: they astonish'd all resistance lost,
All courage; down their idle weapons dropp'd;

O'er shields, and helms, and helmed heads he rode
 Of thrones and mighty seraphim prostrate, ⁸⁴¹
 That wished the mountains now might be again
 Thrown on them as a shelter from his ire.
 Nor less on either side tempestuous fell
 His arrows, from the fourfold visag'd Four, ⁸⁴⁵
 Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels
 Distinct alike with multitude of eyes;
 One spirit in them rul'd, and every eye
 Glar'd light'ning, and shot forth pernicious fire
 Among th' accurst, that wither'd all their strength,
 And of their wonted vigour left them drain'd, ⁸⁵¹
 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.
 Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd
 His thunder in mid volley, for he meant
 Not to destroy, but root them out of heaven. ⁸⁵⁵
 The overthrown he rais'd, and as a herd
 Of goats or timorous flock together throng'd
 Drove them before him thunder-struck, pursu'd
 With terrors and with furies to the bounds

⁸⁴¹ *prostrate*] Fairfax and Spenser accent this word on the last syllable. v. Tasso, c. i. 88;

'And lay his powers prostrate.' F. Qu. xii. 89.

'Before fair Britomart she fell prostrate. *Newton*.

⁸⁵⁵ *thunder*] See Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. xx. st. 102.

'Down plung'd this mixed rout which almost split
 The greedy throat of the sulphureous deep,
 Loud was the noise of this great fall, but yet
 Far louder was their crie, who down the steep
 Eternal precipice still tumbled, and
 No bottom saw, to bid their ruine stand.'

And crystal wall of heaven, which op'ning wide
 Roll'd inward, and a spacious gap disclos'd 861
 Into the wasteful deep ; the monstrous sight
 Struck them with horror backward ; but far worse
 Urg'd them behind ; headlong themselves they
 threw

Down from the verge of heaven ; eternal wrath 865
 Burn'd after them to the bottomless pit.
 Hell heard th' unsufferable noise, hell saw
 Heaven ruining from heaven, and would have fled
 Affrighted ; but strict fate had cast too deep
 Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870
 Nine days they fell ; confounded Chaos roar'd,
 And felt tenfold confusion in their fall
 Through his wild anarchy ; so huge a rout
 Incumber'd him with ruin : hell at last
 Yawning receiv'd them whole, and on them clos'd ;
 Hell their fit habitation, fraught with fire 875
 Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.
 Disburden'd heaven rejoic'd, and soon repair'd
 Her mural breach, returning whence it roll'd.

Sole victor from th' expulsion of his foes 880
 Messiah his triumphal chariot turn'd :
 To meet him all his saints, who silent stood
 Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts,

868 *ruining*] Falling down with ruin, from the Italian *ruinando*. v. Tasso's *Gier. lib. ix. 39*.

'Gli alberi intorno *ruinando* atterra.' *Thyer*.

877 *house*] Fairfax's Tasso, ix. st. 59.

'Fit house for them, the *house of grief and pain*.'

Newton.

With jubilee advanc'd; and as they went,
 Shaded with branching palm, each order bright ⁸⁸⁸
 Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,
 Son, Heir, and Lord, to him dominion giv'n,
 Worthiest to reign: he celebrated rode
 Triumphant through mid heaven, into the courts
 And temple of his mighty Father thron'd ⁸⁹⁰
 On high; who into glory him receiv'd,
 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.

Thus measuring things in heaven by things on
 At thy request, and that thou may'st beware [earth,
 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd ⁸⁹⁵
 What might have else to human race been hid;
 The discord which befell, and war in heaven
 Among th' angelic powers, and the deep fall
 Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd
 With Satan, he who envies now thy state; ⁹⁰⁰
 Who now is plotting how he may seduce
 Thee also from obedience, that with him
 Bereav'd of happiness thou may'st partake
 His punishment, eternal misery;
 Which would be all his solace and revenge, ⁹⁰⁵
 As a despite done against the Most High,
 Thee once to gain companion of his woe.
 But listen not to his temptations, warn
 Thy weaker; let it profit thee to have heard
 By terrible example the reward ⁹¹⁰
 Of disobedience; firm they might have stood,
 Yet fell: remember, and fear to transgress.

⁹⁰⁰ *he*] The construction, Bentley observes, requires 'him.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VII.

THE ARGUMENT.

RAFAEL, at the request of Adam, relates how, and wherefore, this world was first created; that **GOD**, after the expelling of Satan and his angels out of heaven, declared his pleasure to create another world, and other creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with glory and attendance of angels to perform the work of creation in six days: the angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and his reascension into heaven.

DESCEND from heaven, Urania, by that name
 If rightly thou art call'd, whose voice divine
 Following, above th' Olympian hill I soar,
 Above the flight of Pegasean wing.
 The meaning, not the name, I call: for thou
 Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top
 Of old Olympus dwell'st, but heavenly born,
 Before the hills appear'd, or fountain flow'd,
 Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,
 Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play

¹ *old Olympus*] 'cold.' *Bentl. MS.* 1. 516. 1. 428. 2. 393.

¹ *old*] Some would read 'cold,' as in book i. 516; but it is called 'old,' as being 'fam'd of old,' see book i. 420, ii. 593.
Newton.

In presence of th' almighty Father, pleas'd
 With thy celestial song. Up led by thee
 Into the heaven of heav'ns I have presum'd,
 An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air,
 Thy temp'ring; with like safety guided down 15
 Return me to my native element:
 Lest from this flying steed unrein'd, as once
 Bellerophon, though from a lower clime,
 Dismounted, on the Aleian field I fall,
 Erroneous 'there to wander and forlorn. 20
 Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound,
 Within the visible diurnal sphere;
 Standing on earth, not rapt above the pole,
 More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchang'd
 To hoarse or mute, though fall'n on evil days, 25
 On evil days though fall'n, and evil tongues,
 In darkness, and with dangers compass round,
 And solitude; yet not alone, while thou
 Visit'st my slumbers nightly, or when morn
 Purples the east. Still govern thou my song, 30
 Urania, and fit audience find, though few.
 But drive far off the barbarous dissonance
 Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race
 Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard
 In Rhodope, where woods and rocks had ears 35
 To rapture, till the savage clamour drown'd
 Both harp and voice; nor could the muse defend

³⁵ ears] Hor. Od. i. xii. v. 11.

'Auribus fidibus canoris

Ducere quercus.'

Todd.

Her son. So fail not thou, who thee implores :
 For thou art heavenly, she an empty dream.
 Say, goddess, what ensu'd when Raphael, 40
 The affable arch-angel, had forewarn'd
 Adam by dire example to beware
 Apostasy, by what befell in heaven
 To those apostates, lest the like befall
 In Paradise to Adam or his race, 45
 Charg'd not to touch the interdicted tree,
 If they transgress, and slight that sole command,
 So easily obey'd, amid the choice
 Of all tastes else to please their appetite,
 Though wand'ring. He with his consorted Eve 50
 The story heard attentive, and was fill'd
 With admiration and deep muse, to hear
 Of things so high and strange, things to their
 thought
 So unimaginable as hate in heaven,
 And war so near the peace of GOD in bliss 55
 With such confusion : but the evil soon
 Driv'n back redounded as a flood on those
 From whom it sprung, impossible to mix
 With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repeal'd
 The doubts that in his heart arose : and now 60
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know
 What nearer might concern him, how this world
 Of heaven and earth conspicuous first began,
 When, and whereof created, for what cause,
 What within Eden or without was done 65
 Before his memory, as one whose drouth

Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current stream,
Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,
Proceeded thus to ask his heavenly guest.

Great things, and full of wonder in our ears, ⁷²
Far differing from this world, thou hast reveal'd,
Divine interpreter, by favour sent
Down from the empyrean to forewarn
Us timely of what might else have been our loss,
Unknown, which human knowledge could not
reach:

For which to the infinitely Good we owe ⁷³
Immortal thanks, and his admonishment
Receive with solemn purpose to observe
Immutably his sovereign will, the end
Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsaf'd ⁷⁴
Gently for our instruction to impart
Things above earthly thought, which yet concern'd
Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seem'd,
Deign to descend now lower, and relate
What may no less perhaps avail us known; ⁷⁵
How first began this heaven which we behold
Distant so high, with moving fires adorn'd

⁷² *interpreter*] So Mercury is called in Virgil. 'Interpres Divûm.' *Æn.* iv. 378. *Newton*.

⁷⁴ *relate*] So in the *Adamus Exsul* of Grotius, p. 16. Adam says to the angel:

'Age, si vacabit, (scire nam perfectius
Quæ facta fuerint, ante me factum, potes)
Narra petenti, quomodo, quoque ordine
Tam magna numeris machina impleta est suis.'

Innumerable, and this which yields or fills
 All space, the ambient air wide interfus'd
 Embracing round this florid earth ; what cause ⁹⁰
 Mov'd the Creator in his holy rest
 Through all eternity so late to build
 In chaos, and the work begun, how soon
 Absolv'd, if unforbid thou may'st unfold
 What we not to explore the secrets ask ⁹⁵
 Of his eternal empire, but the more
 To magnify his works, the more we know.
 And the great light of day yet wants to run
 Much of his race, though steep. Suspense in heaven,
 Held by thy voice, thy potent voice, he hears, ¹⁰⁰
 And longer will delay to hear thee tell
 His generation, and the rising birth
 Of nature from the unapparent deep :
 Or if the star of ev'ning and the moon ¹⁰⁴
 Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring
 Silence, and Sleep list'ning to thee will watch ;
 Or we can bid his absence, till thy song
 End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine.
 Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought ;
 And thus the godlike angel answer'd mild. ¹¹⁰
 This also thy request with caution ask'd

⁹⁰ *florid*] Globous. *Benl. MS.*

⁹⁵ *heaven*] In the first edition there was no comma after 'heaven;' Pearce altered the punctuation.

¹⁰⁸ *unapparent*] ἀόρατος. *Benl. MS.*

¹⁰⁸ *End*] for 'ending dismiss thee;' so ii. 917, 'Stood, and look'd' for 'standing look'd' *Todd.*

Obtain : though to recount almighty works
 What words or tongue of seraph can suffice,
 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend ?
 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve ¹¹⁴
 To glorify the Maker, and infer
 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld
 Thy hearing; such commission from above
 I have receiv'd, to answer thy desire
 Of knowledge within bounds; beyond abstain ¹²⁰
 To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope
 Things not reveal'd, which th' invisible King,
 Only omniscient, hath suppress in night,
 To none communicable in earth or heaven :
 Enough is left besides to search and know. ¹²⁵
 But knowledge is as food, and needs no less
 Her temperance over appetite, to know
 In measure what the mind may well contain ;
 Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns
 Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind. ¹³⁰
 Know then, that after Lucifer from heaven,
 So call him, brighter once amidst the host
 Of angels, than that star the stars among,

¹²⁸ *night*] Hor. Od. iii. 29. 29.

'Prudens futuri temporis exitum
 Caliginosa nocte premit Deus.' *Thyrr.*

¹²⁹ *surfeit*] See Davenant' Gondibert, c. viii. st. 22.

'For though books serve as diet of the mind,
 If knowledge early got, self-value breeds,
 By false digestion it is turn'd to wind,
 And what should nourish on the eater feeds.'

Fell with his flaming legions through the deep
 Into his place, and the great Son return'd 135
 Victorious with his saints, th' omnipotent
 Eternal Father from his throne beheld
 Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

At least our envious foe hath fail'd, who thought
 All like himself rebellious, by whose aid 140
 This inaccessible high strength, the seat
 Of deity supreme, us dispossess,
 He trusted to have seiz'd, and into fraud
 Drew many, whom their place knows here no
 more :

Yet far the greater part have kept, I see, 145
 Their station ; heav'n yet populous retains
 Number sufficient to possess her realms
 Though wide, and this high temple to frequent
 With ministeries due and solemn rites.
 But lest his heart exalt him in the harm 150
 Already done, to have dispeopled heaven,
 My damage fondly deem'd, I can repair
 That detriment, if such it be to lose
 Self-lost, and in a moment will create
 Another world, out of one man a race 155
 Of men innumerable, there to dwell,
 Not here, till by degrees of merit rais'd,
 They open to themselves at length the way
 Up hither, under long obedience try'd,

¹³⁹ *least*] Mr. Thyer saith, 'That I do not like taking liberties with the text, or I should read "at last."''

And earth be chang'd to heaven, and heaven to
earth,

One kingdom, joy and union without end. 161

Meanwhile inhabit lax, ye powers of heaven,

And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee

This I perform, speak thou, and be it done.

My overshadowing spirit and might with thee 168

I send along ; ride forth, and bid the deep

Within appointed bounds be heaven and earth,

Boundless the deep, because I Am who fill

Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.

Though I uncircumscrib'd myself retire, 170

And put not forth my goodness, which is free

To act, or not : necessity and chance

Approach not me, and what I will is fate.

So spake th' Almighty, and to what he spake

His Word, the Filial Godhead, gave effect. 175

Immediate are the acts of God, more swift

Than time or motion, but to human ears

Cannot without process of speech be told,

So told as earthly notion can receive.

Great triumph and rejoicing were in heaven, 180

When such was heard declar'd the Almighty's will :

Glory they sung to the Most High, good will

¹⁷⁸ *fate*] Todd has quoted Plato's *Timæus*, ed. Serrani, vol. iii. p. 41. Bentley cites Lucan, v. ver. 91. Jortin, *Statii Theb.* i. 212. Thyer, *Claud. de R. Pros.* ii. 306. and Tasso *Gier. Lib.* iv. 17.

'Sia destin ciò ch' io voglio.'

¹⁸² *the*] Bentley reads 'to God most high,' which Newton approves.

To future men, and in their dwellings peace ;
 Glory to him, whose just avenging ire
 Had driven out th' ungodly from his sight 185
 And th' habitations of the just ; to him
 Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd
 Good out of evil to create, in stead
 Of spirits malign a better race to bring
 Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse 190
 His good to worlds and ages infinite.

So sang the Hierarchies. Mean while the Son
 On his great expedition now appear'd,
 Girt with omnipotence, with radiance crown'd
 Of majesty divine, sapience and love 195
 Immense, and all his Father in him shone.
 About his chariot numberless were pour'd
 Cherub and seraph, potentates and thrones,
 And virtues, winged spirits, and chariots wing'd,
 From the armoury of GOD, where stand of old 200
 Myriads, between two brazen mountains lodg'd
 Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,
 Celestial equipage ; and now came forth
 Spontaneous, for within them spirit liv'd,
 Attendant on their Lord : heaven open'd wide 205
 Her ever during gates, harmonious sound
 On golden hinges moving, to let forth
 The King of glory, in his powerful Word
 And Spirit coming to create new worlds.
 On heavenly ground they stood, and from the shore
 They view'd the vast immeasurable abyss 211
 Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,

Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds
 And surging waves, as mountains, to assault 214
 Heaven's height, and with the centre mix the pole.

Silence, ye troubled waves, and, thou deep, peace,
 Said then th' omnific Word, your discord end.

Nor staid ; but, on the wings of cherubim
 Uplifted, in Paternal Glory rode
 Far into Chaos and the world unborn ; 220
 For Chaos heard his voice. Him all his train
 Follow'd in bright procession to behold
 Creation, and the wonders of his might.
 Then stay'd the fervid wheels, and in his hand
 He took the golden compasses, prepar'd 225
 In God's eternal store, to circumscribe
 This universe, and all created things.
 One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd
 Round through the vast profundity obscure,
 And said, thus far extend, thus far thy bounds,
 This be thy just circumference, O world. 231

Thus God the heaven created, thus the earth,
 Matter unform'd and void. Darkness profound
 Cover'd th' abyss ; but on the wat'ry calm
 His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspread,
 And vital virtue infus'd and vital warmth
 Throughout the fluid mass, but downward purg'd

²¹⁴ And] Newton would read 'In surging waves;' it seems better, says Todd, as the *Doctor observes*, to say of the sea, 'in surging waves,' than 'by.'

²²⁴ fervid] Hor. Od. l. i. 4.

'Metaque fervidis
 Evitata rotis.' *Hume.*

The black, tartareous, cold, infernal, dregs,
 Adverse to life : then founded, then conglob'd
 Like things to like ; the rest to several place 240
 Disparted, and between spun out the air,
 And earth self-balanc'd on her centre hung.

Let there be light, said GOD, and forthwith light
 Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure,
 Sprung from the deep, and from her native east
 To journey through the aery gloom began, 246
 Spher'd in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun
 Was not ; she in a cloudy tabernacle
 Sojourn'd the while. GOD saw the light was good ;
 And light from darkness by the hemisphere 250
 Divided : light the day, and darkness night,
 He nam'd. Thus was the first day ev'n and morn :
 Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung
 By the celestial choirs, when orient light
 Exhaling first from darkness they beheld, 256
 Birth-day of heaven and earth ; with joy and shout
 The hollow universal orb they fill'd,
 And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning prais'd
 GOD and his works, Creator him they sung,
 Both when first evening was, and when first morn.

Again GOD said, Let there be firmament
 Amid the waters, and let it divide
 The waters from the waters : and GOD made
 The firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,
 Transparent, elemental air, diffus'd 265
 In circuit to the uttermost convex

259 *founded*] Rounded. *Bentl. MS.*

Their small peculiar, though from human sight
 So far remote, with diminution seen.
 First in his east the glorious lamp was seen, ⁸⁷³
 Regent of day, and all th' horizon round
 Invested with bright rays, jocund to run
 His longitude through heaven's high road: the gray
 Dawn and the Pleiades before him danc'd,
 Shedding sweet influence. Less bright the moon,
 But opposite in level'd west was set ⁸⁷⁶
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her light
 From him, for other light she needed none
 In that aspect; and still that distance keeps
 Till night, then in the east her turn she shines, ⁸⁸⁰
 Revolv'd on heaven's great axle, and her reign
 With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,
 With thousand thousand stars, that then appear'd
 Spangling the hemisphere: then first adorn'd

⁸⁷³ *gray*] See Carew's Poems, p. 60, 12mo.

'The yellow planets, and the *gray*
Dawn, shall attend thee on thy way.' Todd.

⁸⁷⁴ *Pleiades*] Phosphoros. *Bentl. MS.*

⁸⁷⁵ *sweet*] P. Fletcher's Locusta, p. 40.

'There every *starre sheds his sweet influence.*' Todd.

⁸⁷⁶ *opposite*] v. Adamus Exsul of Grotius, p. 20.

'Sed Luna, noctis domina, fraternum sibi
 Furata lumen, splendet alienâ face:
 Cumque alma Phœbe Solis opposita visæ
 Regione vadit, lumen adversum bibit.'

⁸⁸⁰ *thousand stars*]

'Rutilantia corpora mille,
 Mille oculos, mille igniculos intexit Olympo.'

A. Rams. Poem. Sacro. p. 6.

With their bright luminaries, that set and rose,
 Glad ev'ning and glad morn crown'd the fourth
 And GOD said, Let the waters generate [day.
 Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul :
 And let fowl fly above the earth, with wings
 Display'd on the open firmament of heaven. 390
 And GOD created the great whales, and each
 Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously
 The waters generated by their kinds,
 And every bird of wing after his kind ;
 And saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying,
 Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas, 395
 And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill ;
 And let the fowl be multiply'd on the earth.
 Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay,
 With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals 400
 Of fish, that with their fins and shining scales
 Glide under the green wave, in sculls that oft
 Bank the mid sea : part single, or with mate,
 Graze the sea weed their pasture, and through
 groves
 Of coral stray, or sporting with quick glance 405
 Show to the sun their wav'd coats dropt with gold ;
 Or in their pearly shells at ease attend
 Moist nutriment, or under rocks their food

402 *sculls*] See Hagthorpe's Divine Meditations, p. 89.

'The *sculls*, oh! Lord, of all the lakes and fountains,
 The herdes are thine upon ten thousand mountains.'

407 *shells*] A. Rams. Poem Sac. p. 8.

'Pars quoque tarda, hærens scopulis, sub cortice concha,
 Pinnaeque, pedumque expers, depascit arenam.'

In jointed armour watch : on smooth the seal
 And bended dolphins play ; part huge of bulk,
 Wallowing unwieldy, enormous in their gait,
 Tempest the ocean ; there Leviathan,
 Hugest of living creatures, on the deep
 Stretch'd like a promontory sleeps, or swims
 And seems a moving land, and at his gills 415
 Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out a sea.
 Mean while the tepid caves, and fens, and shores,
 Their brood as numerous hatch from the egg, that
 Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclos'd [soon
 Their callow young ; but feather'd soon and fledg'd,
 They summ'd their pens, and soaring th' air sublime
 With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud

409 *armour watch*] A. Ramsæi Poem. Sacr. p. 7.

—— non remige pinnâ

Sulcat aquas, munita latens sub tegmine testa.'

410 *bended*] See Huet's Note to Manilius, v. 418: he gives near ten examples from the Latin Poets of this expression. 'Perpetuum hoc Delphinum Epitheton.' v. Burm. ad Ovid. i. p. 269. 'Curvo Delphine.' Sat. Theb. i. 121. Also Fanshew's Pastor Fido. p. 11.

'The crook-back'd dolphin loves in floods.'

416 *spouts*] Ov. Met. iii. 686.

'Et acceptum patulis mare naribus efflant.' Newton.

422 *clang*] See Stat. Theb. xii. 516, and Burman's Note to Ovid. Metam. xii. 528. See Orellius on Arnobius, vol. ii. p. 477. Tryphiodorus. v. 345. (Merrick's Transl.)

'Loud as th' embody'd cranes, a numerous throng
 Driven by the stormy winter sail along,
 While the faint ploughman, and the labouring swain
 Curse the dire *clangor* of the noisy train.'

In prospect : there the eagle and the stork
 On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build :
 Part loosely wing the region, part more wise 425
 In common, rang'd in figure, wedge their way,
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth
 Their aery caravan, high over seas
 Flying, and over lands, with mutual wing 430
 Easing their flight ; so steers the prudent crane
 Her annual voyage, borne on winds ; the air
 Floats, as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd
 plumes.

From branch to branch the smaller birds with song
 Solac'd the woods, and spread their painted wings
 Till ev'n ; nor then the solemn nightingale 435
 Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her soft lays.
 Others on silver lakes and rivers bath'd
 Their downy breast ; the swan, with arched neck

425 *region*] Spens. F. Q. iv. 8. 8. *Bentl. MS.*

430 *steers*] See Sir J. Davies on Dancing, p. 158. (1602.)

' Yet do the cranes deserve a greater praise,
 Which keep such measure in their airy ways,
 As when they all in order ranked are.'

431 *air*] See Æsch. Prom. v. 125.

αἰθήρ δ' ἐλαφραίς

Πτερίγων βυβαῖς ὑποσυρίζει. Todd.

434 *Solac'd*] Virg. Æn. vii. 34.

' *Æthera mulcebant cantu.*' Todd.

438 *Swan*] See Donne's Poems, p. 297. (1633.)

' When goodly like a ship in her full trim,
 A *swan* so white that you may unto him
 Compare all whitenesse, but himself to none,
 Glided along, and as he glided watch'd,
 And with his *arched neck* this poor fish catch'd,
 It mov'd with state.'

Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows
 Her state with oary feet: yet oft they quit ⁴⁴⁰
 The dank, and rising on stiff pennons tower
 The mid aerial sky. Others on ground [sounds
 Walk'd firm: the crested cock, whose clarion
 The silent hours, and th' other, whose gay train
 Adorns him, colour'd with the florid hue ⁴⁴⁵
 Of rainbows and starry eyes. The waters thus
 With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,
 Ev'ning and morn solemniz'd the fifth day.

The sixth, and of creation last, arose ⁴⁴⁸
 With ev'ning harps and matin, when God said,
 Let the earth bring forth soul living in her kind,
 Cattle and creeping things, and beast of the earth,
 Each in their kind. The earth obey'd, and straight
 Op'ning her fertile womb teem'd at a birth

⁴⁴⁰ *oary*] Sil. Ital. xiv. 190.

'Innatat albus *olor*, pronoque immobile corpus
 Dat fluvio, et *pedibus* tacitas *eremigat* undas.'

Wakefield.

⁴⁴⁸ *crested cock*] See Martial. Epig. xiv. 228.

'*Cristataque* sonant undique lucis aves.'

See Sylvester's Du Bartas, p. 80.

'The *crested cock* sings "Hunt is up" to him.'

⁴⁴⁶ *starry eyes*] See Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. i. st. 61. v. 2.

'As when the gallant peacock doth display
 His *starry* train.'

and A. Ramsæi Poem. Sacr. vol. i. p. 8.

'Dum tumet, et caudæ *stellatæ* syrmatæ spectat.'

⁴⁴⁹ *soul*] In Milton's own edition '*fowl* living.' Bentley pointed out the error and corrected it.

⁴⁵² *things*] Bentley and Newton consider that there is an error in the text, and that we ought to read 'thing.'

Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms, 455
 Limb'd and full grown. Out of the ground up rose
 As from his lair the wild beast, where he wons
 In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den ;
 Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walk'd ;
 The cattle in the fields and meadows green : 460
 Those rare and solitary, these in flocks
 Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.
 The grassy clods now calv'd ; now half appear'd
 The tawny lion, pawing to get free 464
 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from bonds,
 And rampant shakes his brinded mane ; the ounce,

457 *wonns*] Fairfax's Tasso, b. xvi. st. 67.

'A thousand devils in Limbo deep that *wonne*.' Todd.

462 *broad*] Hom. Il. xi. 679.

— *αἰπόλια πλατέ' αἰών*. Richardson.

463 *calv'd*] See Nonni Dionysiaca, iv. 427.

Καὶ στάχυν αὐτολόχευτος ἀνηέζητο γιγάντων,
 Ὡν δ' μὲν ὑψικάρηνος ἀνέδραμεν ἄκρα τιταίνων
 Στήθεος εὐθώρηκος, δ' δὲ προθορόντι καρήνῳ
 Φρικτὸν ἀνοιγομένης ὑπερέσχεθεν ὤμον ἀρούρης·
 "Ἄλλος ἄνω προέκνυεν ἐς ὀμφαλὸν· ὃς δ' ἐπὶ γαίῃ
 Ἡμιτελὴς ἀνέτελλε, πεδοτρεφὲς σπλον αἰείρων·
 "Ἄλλος ὑπερκύπτοντα λόφον προβλήτα τιταίνων,
 "Οὐπω στέρνον ἔφαινε, καὶ εἰσέτι μητρὸς ἀνέρπων
 Ἐκ λαγόνων κατὰ βαιὸν ἀταρβεί μάρνατο Κάδμω.

466 *broke*] Virg. *Æn.* xi. 492.

'Abruptis fugit præsepia vinclis.'

466 *shakes*] A. Ramsæi P. Sacr. p. 9.

'Hinc Leo prædator, Lybicus novus incola campis,
 Ore fremens, oculis scintillans, perque torosa
 Colla jubar jactans.' —

The libbard, and the tiger, as the mole
 Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw
 In hillocks ; the swift stag from under ground
 Bore up his branching head ; scarce from his mould
 Behemoth, biggest born of earth, upheav'd 471
 His vastness: fleec'd the flocks and bleating rose,
 As plants : ambiguous between sea and land
 The river horse and scaly crocodile.
 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground, 475
 Insect or worm ; those wav'd their limber fans
 For wings, and smallest lineaments exact
 In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride
 With spots of gold and purple, azure and green :
 These as a line their long dimension drew, 480
 Streaking the ground with sinuous trace ; not all
 Minims of nature ; some of serpent kind,
 Wondrous in length and corpulence, involv'd
 Their snaky folds, and added wings. First crept
 The parsimonious emmet, provident 485
 Of future, in small room large heart inclos'd,
 / Pattern of just equality perhaps
 Hereafter, joined in her popular tribes
 Of commonalty : swarming next appear'd
 The female bee, that feeds her husband drone 490

484 *snaky folds*] A. Rams. P. Sac. p. 10.

'Atque orbibus orbes
 Implexos sinuantem anguem.'

485 *provident—large heart*] The former part from Hor. Sat.
 l. i. 85, and the latter from Virg. Georg. iv. 83. *Newton*.

Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells
 With honey stor'd: the rest are numberless,
 And thou their natures know'st, and gav'st them
 Needless to thee repeated; nor unknown [names,
 The serpent, subtlest beast of all the field, 495
 Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes
 And hairy mane terrific, though to thee
 Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.

Now heaven in all her glory shone, and roll'd
 Her motions, as the great First Mover's hand 500
 First wheel'd their course; earth in her rich attire
 Consummate lovely smil'd; air, water, earth,
 By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was
 walk'd

Frequent; and of the sixth day yet remain'd;
 There wanted yet the master-work, the end 505
 Of all yet done; a creature, who not prone
 And brute as other creatures, but indu'd
 With sanctity of reason, might erect
 His stature, and upright with front serene
 Govern the rest, self-knowing; and from thence 510

491 *waxen cells*] So Marino's Sl. of the Innocents, p. 28.

'Or when the bees, like murmuring armies, hide
 The tops of flowers, where sweetest nectar flows,
 And on their laden wings the odorous prey
 In troops, unto their *waxen camp* convey.'

497 *hairy mane*] See Virg. *Æn.* ii. 206. Petronii Trojæ
 Elois, v. 88. J. Obsequens de Prodigis, p. 54. 'Angues
 jubati.' Plauti Amphitr. act. v. sc. i. 'Jubatus anguis
 major solitis.' Capitolin. Vit. Anton. Pii, ix. 35, ed.
 Putman.

Magnanimous to correspond with heaven ;
 But grateful to acknowledge whence his good
 Descends, thither with heart, and voice, and eyes
 Directed in devotion, to adore
 And worship GOD supreme, who made him chief
 Of all his works : therefore the omnipotent 515
 Eternal Father, for where is not he
 Present ? thus to his Son audibly spake.

Let us make now man in our image, man
 In our similitude, and let them rule 520
 Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,
 Beast of the field, and over all the earth,
 And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.
 This said, he form'd thee, Adam, thee, O man,
 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd 525
 The breath of life : in his own image he
 Created thee, in the image of GOD
 Express, and thou becam'st a living soul.
 Male he created thee, but thy consort
 Female for race ; then bless'd mankind, and said,
 Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth, 531
 Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold
 Over fish of the sea, and fowl of the air,
 And every living thing that moves on the earth.
 Wherever thus created, for no place 535
 Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st,

52c *thence*] Tickell, Fenton, and Bentley have adopted in this passage a wrong punctuation, putting only a comma after 'earth' (524), and a full stop after 'name' (526). Newton restored the reading of Milton's own editions.

He brought thee into this delicious grove,
 This garden, planted with the trees of God,
 Delectable both to behold and taste ;
 And freely all their pleasant fruit for food 540
 Gave thee ; all sorts are here that all th' earth yields,
 Variety without end ; but of the tree,
 Which tasted, works knowledge of good and evil,
 Thou may'st not : in the day thou eat'st thou dy'st ;
 Death is the penalty impos'd ; beware, 545
 And govern well thy appetite, lest sin
 Surprize thee, and her black attendant death.

Here finish'd he, and all that he had made
 View'd, and behold all was entirely good ;
 So ev'n and morn accomplish'd the sixth day : 550
 Yet not, till the Creator from his work
 Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd,
 Up to the heaven of heavens his high abode,
 Thence to behold this new-created world,
 Th' addition of his empire, how it show'd 555
 In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,
 Answering his great idea. Up he rode,
 Follow'd with acclamation and the sound
 Symphonious of ten thousand harps, that tun'd
 Angelic harmonies : the earth, the air 560
 Resounded, thou remember'st, for thou heard'st ;
 The heavens and all the constellations rung,
 The planets in their station list'ning stood,
 While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.
 Open, ye everlasting gates, they sung, 565
 Open, ye heavens, your living doors ; let in

The great Creator, from his work return'd
 Magnificent, his six days' work, a world!
 Open, and henceforth oft; for GOD will deign
 To visit oft the dwellings of just men 570
 Delighted, and with frequent intercourse
 Thither will send his winged messengers
 On errands of supernal grace. So sung
 The glorious train ascending: He through heaven,
 That open'd wide her blazing portals, led 575
 To GOD's eternal house direct the way,
 A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold,
 And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear
 Seen in the galaxy, that milky way
 Which nightly as a circling zone thou seest 580
 Powder'd with stars. And now on earth the seventh
 Ev'ning arose in Eden, for the sun
 Was set, and twilight from the east came on,
 Forerunning night; when at the holy mount
 Of heaven's high seated top, th' imperial throne 585
 Of Godhead, fix'd for ever firm and sure,
 The Filial Power arriv'd, and sat him down
 With his great Father; for he also went
 Invisible, yet stay'd, such privilege
 Hath Omnipresence, and the work ordain'd, 590
 Author and end of all things, and from work
 Now resting, bless'd and hallow'd the seventh day,
 As resting on that day from all his work,
 But not in silence holy kept; the harp

⁵⁸¹ *Powder'd*] Sylvester's *Du Bartas*, p. 76.

'Powdred with stars streaming with glorious light.' Todd.

Had work, and rested not ; the solemn pipe 585
And dulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,
All sounds on fret by string or golden wire,
Temper'd soft tunings, intermix'd with voice
Choral or unison : of incense clouds
Fuming from golden censers hid the mount. 600
Creation and the six days acts they sung ;
Great are thy works, Jehovah, infinite [tongue
Thy power ; what thought can measure thee, or
Relate thee ! greater now in thy return
Than from the giant angels ; thee that day 605
Thy thunders magnified ; but to create
Is greater than created to destroy.
Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound
Thy empire ! easily the proud attempt
Of spirits apostate and their counsels vain 610
Thou hast repell'd, while impiously they thought
Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw
The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks
To lessen thee, against his purpose serves
To manifest the more thy might : his evil 615
Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.
Witness this new-made world, another heaven
From heaven gate not far, founded in view
On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea ;
Of amplitude almost immense, with stars 620
Numerous, and every star perhaps a world
Of destin'd habitation ; but thou know'st
Their seasons : among these the seat of men,
Earth, with her nether ocean circumfus'd,

Their pleasant dwelling place. Thrice happy men,
And sons of men, whom GOD hath thus advanc'd,
Created in his image, there to dwell
And worship him; and in reward to rule
Over his works, on earth, in sea, or air,
And multiply a race of worshippers 630
Holy and just: thrice happy, if they know
Their happiness, and persevere upright.

So sung they, and the empyrean rung
With Hallelujahs: thus was Sabbath kept.
And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd 635
How first this world and face of things began,
And what before thy memory was done
From the beginning, that posterity
Inform'd by thee might know. If else thou seek'st
Aught, not surpassing human measure, say. 640

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VIII.

THE ARGUMENT.

ADAM inquires concerning celestial motions, is doubtfully answer'd, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge. Adam assents; and still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remember'd since his own creation; his placing in Paradise; his talk with GOD concerning solitude and fit society; his first meeting and nuptials with Eve. His discourse with the angel thereupon; who, after admonitions repeated, departs.

THE angel ended, and in Adam's ear
 So charming left his voice, that he awhile
 Thought him still speaking, still stood fix'd to hear:
 Then, as new wak'd, thus gratefully replied.

What thanks sufficient, or what recompence
 Equal, have I to render thee, divine
 Historian? who thus largely hast allay'd

¹ *The angel*] In the first edition of this Poem in ten books, here was only this line,

To whom thus Adam gratefully replied.

This would have been too abrupt a beginning for a new book. *Newton.*

² *What thanks*] See Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. xii. st. 171.

'My soule's sweet friend, *what thanks* can I repay
 For all this honey which thy tongue hath hed.'

The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf'd
 This friendly condescension to relate
 Things else by me unsearchable, now heard 10
 With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
 With glory attributed to the high
 Creator : something yet of doubt remains,
 Which only thy solution can resolve.
 When I behold this goodly frame, this world, 15
 Of heaven and earth consisting, and compute
 Their magnitudes, this earth a spot, a grain,
 An atom, with the firmament compar'd
 And all her number'd stars, that seem to roll
 Spaces incomprehensible, for such 20
 Their distance argues, and their swift return
 Diurnal, merely to officiate light
 Round this opacous earth, this punctual spot,
 One day and night, in all their vast survey
 Useless besides ; reasoning I oft admire, 25
 How nature wise and frugal could commit
 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
 So many nobler bodies to create,
 Greater so manifold, to this one use,
 For aught appears, and on their orbs impose 30
 Such restless revolution day by day

⁸ *The thirst*] See Dante II Purgator. c. xviii. ver. 4.

'Ed io, cui nuova sete ancor frugava,
 Di fuor taceva, e dentro dicea.'

⁹ *condescension*] Conversation, ver. 649. *Bentl. MS.*

¹⁴ *solution*] Decision. *Bentl. MS.*

¹⁵ *goodly*] Hamlet, act ii. scene ii.

'This goodly frame the Earth.'

Repeated, while the sedentary earth,
 That better might with far less compass move,
 Served by more noble than herself, attains
 Her end without least motion, and receives, 35
 As tribute, such a sumless journey brought
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light ;
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails.

So spake our sire, and by his count'nance seem'd
 Entering on studious thoughts abstruse ; which
 Eve

Perceiving where she sat retir'd in sight, 41
 With lowliness majestic from her seat,
 And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,
 Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flowers,
 To visit how they prosper'd, bud and bloom, 45
 Her nursery ; they at her coming sprung,
 And touch'd by her fair tendance gladlier grew.
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
 Delighted, or not capable her ear
 Of what was high : such pleasure she reserv'd, 50
 Adam relating, she sole auditress ;
 Her husband the relater she preferr'd
 Before the angel, and of him to ask
 Chose rather ; he, she knew, would intermix

⁴⁶ *sprung*] So Marino Adon. c. iii. st. 65, and c. vi. st. 146.

'Tutto al venir d'Adon par che ridenti
 Rivesta il bel giardin novi colori.' *Thyer.*

⁵⁸ *to ask*] In accordance with St. Paul, 1. Corinth. xiv. 35.
 'And if they (women) will learn any thing, let them ask
 their husbands at home.'

Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute 55
 With conjugal caresses; from his lip
 Not words alone pleas'd her. O when meet now
 Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd?
 With goddess-like demeanour forth she went;
 Not unattended, for on her as queen 60
 A pomp of winning graces waited still,
 And from about her shot darts of desire
 Into all eyes to wish her still in sight.
 And Raphael now to Adam's doubt propos'd
 Benevolent and facile thus replied. 65

To ask or search I blame thee not, for heaven
 Is as the book of GOD before thee set,
 Wherein to read his wondrous works, and learn
 His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years.
 This to attain, whether heaven move or earth 70
 Imports not, if thou reckon right; the rest
 From man or angel the great Architect
 Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge
 His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought
 Rather admire; or if they list to try 75

⁵⁵ *solve*] 'Sic ait, ac mediis interserit oscula verbis.

Ovid. Met. x. 659.

and *Epist. xiii. ver. 119*, ed. *Burm.* vol. i. p. 180.

'Quæ mihi dum referes, quamvis audire juvabit;
 Multa tamen capies oscula, multa dabis.
 Semper in his apte narrantia verba resistunt.
 Promptior est dulci lingua retenta mora.'

⁶² *shot*] See *Greene's* *Never too late*, P. act 2. (1616.)

'His bow of steele, *darts* of fire
 He *shot* amongst them sweet *desire*.'

Conjecture, he his fabric of the heavens
 Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move
 His laughter at their quaint opinions wide
 Hereafter, when they come to model heaven
 And calculate the stars, how they will wield ⁸⁰
 The mighty frame, how build, unbuild, contrive,
 To save appearances; how gird the sphere
 With centric and eccentric scribbled o'er,
 Cycle and epicycle, orb in orb.
 Already by thy reasoning this I guess, ⁸⁵
 Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest,
 That bodies bright and greater should not serve
 The less not bright, nor heaven such journeys run,
 Earth sitting still, when she alone receives
 The benefit. Consider first, that great ⁹⁰
 Or bright infers not excellence: the earth
 Though, in comparison of heaven, so small,
 Nor glistening, may of solid good contain
 More plenty than the sun, that barren shines,
 Whose virtue on itself works no effect, ⁹⁵
 But in the fruitful earth: there first receiv'd

⁷⁹ *when*] Manilii Astr. iv. 158.

'Inveniunt et in astra vias, numerisque modisque
 Consummant orbem,'——

⁸⁸ *eccentric*] See Dekker's *If this be not a good Play* the Devil is in it, p. 48. 'In gibberish no man understands of quartiles, aspects, centricall, eccentricall, cosmial, acronical,' &c.; and Lisle's *Du Bartas*, 174. 'Concentricke, excentricke, epicycle, apogee.' Sylvester's *Du Bartas*, p. 140—142.

His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.
Yet not to earth are those bright luminaries
Officious, but to thee earth's habitant.
And for the heavens wide circuit, let it speak 100
The Maker's high magnificence, who built
So spacious, and his line stretch'd out so far ;
That man may know he dwells not in his own ;
An edifice too large for him to fill,
Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest 105
Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.
The swiftness of those circles attribute,
Though numberless, to his omnipotence,
That to corporeal substances could add
Speed almost spiritual: me thou think'st not
slow, 110
Who since the morning hour set out from heaven
Where GOD resides, and ere mid day arriv'd
In Eden, distance inexpressible
By numbers that have name. But this I urge,
Admitting motion in the heavens, to show 115
Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd ;
Not that I so affirm, though so it seem
To thee who hast thy dwelling here on earth.
GOD, to remove his ways from human sense,
Plac'd heaven from earth so far, that earthly sight,
If it presume, might err in things too high,
And no advantage gain. What if the sun
Be centre to the world, and other stars,
By his attractive virtue and their own
Incited, dance about him various rounds? 120

Their wand'ring course now high, now low, then
hid,

Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,
In six thou seest; and what if seventh to these
The planet earth, so steadfast though she seem,
Insensibly three different motions move? 180
Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,
Mov'd contrary with thwart obliquities,
Or save the sun his labour, and that swift
Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb suppos'd,
Invisible else above all stars, the wheel 185
Of day and night; which needs not thy belief,
If earth industrious of herself fetch day
Travelling east, and with her part averse
From the sun's beam meet night, her other part
Still luminous by his ray. What if that light, 190
Sent from her through the wide transpicious air,
To the terrestrial moon be as a star
Enlight'ning her by day, as she by night
This earth? reciprocal, if land be there,
Fields and inhabitants; her spots thou seest 195
As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce
Fruits in her soften'd soil, for some to eat
Allotted there; and other suns perhaps
With their attendant moons thou wilt descry,
Communicating male and female light, 200
Which two great sexes animate the world,
Stor'd in each orb perhaps with some that live.
For such vast room in nature unpossess'd
By living soul, desert and desolate,

Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute 155
 Each orb a glimpse of light, convey'd so far
 Down to this habitable, which returns
 Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.
 But whether thus these things, or whether not,
 Whether the sun predominant in heaven 160
 Rise on the earth, or earth rise on the sun,
 He from the east his flaming road begin,
 Or she from west her silent course advance
 With inoffensive pace, that spinning sleeps 165
 On her soft axle, while she paces ev'n,
 And bears thee soft with the smooth air along,
 Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid ;
 Leave them to GOD above, him serve and fear :
 Of other creatures, as him pleases best,
 Wherever plac'd, let him dispose : joy thou 170
 In what he gives to thee, this paradise
 And thy fair Eve ; heaven is for thee too high
 To know what passes there ; be lowly wise :
 Think only what concerns thee and thy being ;
 Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there
 Live, in what state, condition, or degree, 175
 Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd
 Not of earth only, but of highest heav'n.
 To whom thus Adam, clear'd of doubt, reply'd.

¹⁵⁵ *contribute*] With the same accentuation in May's Edw. III. lib. iii.

' Must contribute to Philip's overthrow.' *Todd*.

¹⁶² *flaming*] Perhaps Milton had in mind the ἀντολὰς φλογώπας ἡλιοστυβεῖς in the Prometheus of Æschylus, verse 791. *A. Dyce*.

How fully hast thou satisfy'd me, pure 180
 Intelligence of heaven, angel serene,
 And freed from intricacies, taught to live
 The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts
 To interrupt the sweet of life, from which
 God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares, 185
 And not molest us, unless we our selves [vain.
 Seek them with wand'ring thoughts, and notions
 But apt the mind or fancy is to rove
 Uncheck'd, and of her roving is no end ;
 Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn,
 That not to know at large of things remote
 From use, obscure and subtle, but to know
 That which before us lies in daily life,
 Is the prime wisdom ; what is more, is fume,
 Or emptiness, or fond impertinence, 190
 And renders us in things that most concern
 Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.
 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend
 A lower flight, and speak of things at hand
 Useful, whence haply mention may arise 200
 Of something not unseasonable to ask
 By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.
 Thee I have heard relating what was done
 Ere my remembrance : now hear me relate
 My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard ; 205
 And day is not yet spent ; till then thou seest
 How subtly to detain thee I devise,
 Inviting thee to hear while I relate,
 Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply :

For while I sit with thee, I seem in heaven, 210
 And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear
 Than fruits of palm-tree pleasantest to thirst
 And hunger both, from labour, at the hour
 Of sweet repast: they satiate, and soon fill,
 Though pleasant; but thy words, with grace divine
 Imbu'd, bring to their sweetness no satiety. 215

To whom thus Raphael answer'd heavenly meek.
 Nor are thy lips ungraceful, sire of men,
 Nor tongue ineloquent; for GOD on thee
 Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd 220
 Inward and outward both, his image fair:
 Speaking or mute all comeliness and grace
 Attends thee, and each word, each motion forms.
 Nor less think we in heaven of thee on earth,
 Than of our fellow servant, and inquire 225
 Gladly into the ways of GOD with man:
 For GOD we see hath honour'd thee, and set
 On man his equal love. Say therefore on;
 For I that day was absent, as befell,
 Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure, 230
 Far on excursion toward the gates of hell,
 Squar'd in full legion, such command we had,

²¹¹ *sweeter*] Stillingfleet refers to Homer's Od. iv. 594, and Newton to Virg. Ecl. v. 45.

²¹⁵ *bring*] See Dante Il Purgator. c. xxxi. v. 128.

'L' anima mia gustava di quel cibo,
 Che saziando di se di se asseta.'

²²⁹ *For I*] How then could he relate the creation? *Benl.*
MS.

To see that none thence issu'd forth a spy,
 Or enemy, while GOD was in his work,
 Lest he, incens'd at such eruption bold, 285
 Destruction with creation might have mix'd.
 Not that they durst without his leave attempt,
 But us he sends upon his high behests
 For state, as Sov'reign King, and to enure
 Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut
 The dismal gates, and barricado'd strong; 291
 But long ere our approaching heard within
 Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,
 Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.
 Glad we return'd up to the coast of light 295
 Ere sabbath ev'ning: so we had in charge.
 But thy relation now; for I attend,
 Pleas'd with thy words, no less than thou with mine.
 So spake the godlike power, and thus our sire.
 For man to tell how human life began 299
 Is hard; for who himself beginning knew?
 Desire with thee still longer to converse
 Induc'd me. As new wak'd from soundest sleep
 Soft on the flowery herb I found me laid,
 In balmy sweat, which with his beams the sun 305
 Soon dry'd, and on the reeking moisture fed.
 Straight toward heaven my wond'ring eyes I turn'd,
 And gaz'd a while the ample sky, till rais'd
 By quick instinctive motion up I sprung,
 As thitherward endeavouring, and upright 310
 Stood on my feet: about me round I saw

288 ample] at th' azure. *Benil, MS.*

Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,
 And liquid lapse of murmuring streams; by these
 Creatures that liv'd, and mov'd, and walk'd, or flew;
 Birds on the branches warbling; all things smil'd,
 With fragrance and with joy my heart o'erflow'd.
 Myself I then perus'd, and limb by limb
 Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran
 With supple joints, as lively vigour led:
 But who I was, or where, or from what cause, ²⁷⁶
 Knew not: to speak I try'd, and forthwith spake;
 My tongue obey'd, and readily could name
 Whate'er I saw. Thou sun, said I, fair light,
 And thou enlighten'd earth, so fresh and gay,
 Ye hills and dales, ye rivers, woods, and plains,
 And ye that live and move, fair creatures, tell,
 Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here? ²⁷⁷
 Not of my self, by some great Maker then,
 In goodness and in power preeminent:

²⁶⁸ *liquid lapse*] 'Prope fontis adlapsum.' v. Apulei Metam.
 v. p. 141. ed. Delph.

²⁶⁵ *smil'd*] Tonson's ed. 1727, prints the passage thus,
 '———— all things smil'd

With fragrance; and with joy my heart o'erflow'd.'

Bentley's edition and others followed the same punctuation:
 but Milton's own edition does not support it.

²⁶⁰ *as*] the second edition reads 'and lively,' which Newton
 conceives to be an error of the press.

²⁷² *name*] Warburton has pointed out a contradiction be-
 tween this passage and ver. 352. In the first, Adam says he
 could name what he saw *before* he got into Paradise; in the
 latter, that God gave him the ability when the beasts came
 to him in Paradise.

Tell me, how may I know him, how adore, 280
From whom I have that thus I move and live,
And feel that I am happier than I know.
While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,
From where I first drew air, and first beheld
This happy light, when answer none return'd, 285
On a green shady bank profuse of flow'rs
Pensive I sat me down; there gentle sleep
First found me, and with soft oppression seiz'd
My drowsed sense, untroubled, though I thought
I then was passing to my former state 290
Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:
When suddenly stood at my head a dream,
Whose inward apparition gently mov'd
My fancy to believe I yet had being, 294
And liv'd: one came, methought, of shape divine,
And said, Thy mansion wants thee, Adam; rise,
First man, of men innumerable ordain'd
First father! call'd by thee, I come thy guide
To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd.
So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd, 298
And over fields and waters, as in air
Smooth sliding without step, last led me up
A woody mountain; whose high top was plain,
A circuit wide, enclos'd, with goodliest trees 304
Planted, with walks, and bowers, that what I saw
Of earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree
Loaden with fairest fruit, that hung to the eye
Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite
To pluck and eat; whereat I wak'd, and found

Before mine eyes all real, as the dream 310
 Had lively shadow'd : here had new begun
 My wand'ring, had not he, who was my guide
 Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,
 Presence Divine. Rejoicing, but with awe,
 In adoration at his feet I fell 315
 Submiss : He rear'd me, and, Whom thou sought'st

I am,

Said mildly, Author of all this thou seest
 Above, or round about thee, or beneath.
 This Paradise I give thee, count it thine
 To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat : 320
 Of every tree that in the garden grows
 Eat freely with glad heart ; fear here no dearth :
 But of the Tree whose operation brings
 Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set
 The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith 325
 Amid the garden by the Tree of Life,
 Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste,
 And shun the bitter consequence : for know,
 The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command
 Transgrest, inevitably thou shalt die ; 330
 From that day mortal, and this happy state
 Shalt lose, expell'd from hence into a world
 Of woe and sorrow. Sternly he pronounc'd
 The rigid interdiction, which resounds
 Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice 335
 Not to incur ; but soon his clear aspect

³²² *world*] See Chapman's *Hom.* II. p. 215. 'Brought us Worlds of Woe.'

Return'd and gracious purpose thus renew'd.
 Not only these fair bounds, but all the earth
 To thee and to thy race I give ; as lords
 Possess it, and all things that therein live, 340
 Or live in sea, or air, beast, fish, and fowl.
 In sign whereof each bird and beast behold
 After their kinds ; I bring them to receive
 From thee their names, and pay thee fealty
 With low subjection ; understand the same 345
 Of fish within their wat'ry residence,
 Not hither summon'd since they cannot change
 Their element to draw the thinner air.
 As thus he spake, each bird and beast behold 349
 Approaching two and two ; these cowering low
 With blandishment, each bird stoop'd on his wing.
 I nam'd them, as they pass'd, and understood
 Their nature, with such knowledge GOD indu'd
 My sudden apprehension : but in these
 I found not what me thought I wanted still ; 355
 And to the heavenly vision thus presum'd.

O by what name, for thou above all these,
 Above mankind, or aught than mankind higher,
 Surpasses far my naming, how may I
 Adore thee, Author of this universe, 360
 And all this good to man, for whose well being
 So amply, and with hands so liberal,
 Thou hast provided all things ? but with me
 I see not who partakes. In solitude
 What happiness ? who can enjoy alone ? 365
 Or all enjoying what contentment find ?

Thus I presumptuous ; and the vision bright,
As with a smile more brighten'd, thus reply'd.

What call'st thou solitude ? Is not the earth
With various living creatures and the air 375
Replenish'd, and all these at thy command
To come and play before thee ? Know'st thou
not

Their language and their ways ? They also know,
And reason not contemptibly ; with these
Find pastime, and bear rule ; thy realm is large. 378

So spake the universal Lord, and seem'd
So ordering. I, with leave of speech implor'd,
And humble deprecation, thus reply'd.

Let not my words offend thee, heavenly Power,
My Maker, be propitious while I speak. 380

Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,
And these inferior far beneath me set ?

Among unequals what society
Can sort, what harmony, or true delight ?

Which must be mutual, in proportion due, 385

Giv'n and receiv'd ; but in disparity,

The one intense, the other still remiss,

Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove

Tedious alike : of fellowship I speak

Such as I seek, fit to participate 390

All rational delight, wherein the brute

Cannot be human consort : they rejoice

Each with their kind, lion with lioness ;

So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd ;

Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl, 395

So well converse, nor with the ox the ape ;
 Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.

Whereto th' Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.

A nice and subtle happiness I see
 Thou to thyself proposest, in the choice 408
 Of thy associates, Adam, and wilt taste
 No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.

What think'st thou then of me, and this my state ?
 Seem I to thee sufficiently possess

Of happiness, or not ? who am alone 409

From all eternity ; for none I know
 Second to me or like, equal much less,

How have I then with whom to hold converse,
 Save with the creatures which I made, and those
 To me inferior, infinite descents 410

Beneath what other creatures are to thee ?

He ceas'd, I lowly answer'd. To attain
 The height and depth of thy eternal ways
 All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things ;
 Thou in thyself art perfect, and in thee 411

Is no deficiency found : not so is man,
 But in degree; the cause of his desire
 By conversation with his like to help
 Or solace his defects. No need that thou
 Should'st propagate, already infinite, 420

And through all numbers absolute, though one.

But man by number is to manifest

His single imperfection, and beget

⁴⁰⁷ *Second*] Hor. Od. i. xii. 18.

'Nec viget quidquam simile, aut secundum.' *Newton.*

Thus I presumptuous ; and the vision bright,
As with a smile more brighten'd, thus reply'd.

What call'st thou solitude ? Is not the earth
With various living creatures and the air 370
Replenish'd, and all these at thy command
To come and play before thee ? Know'st thou
not

Their language and their ways ? They also know,
And reason not contemptibly ; with these
Find pastime, and bear rule ; thy realm is large. 375

So spake the universal Lord, and seem'd
So ordering. I, with leave of speech implor'd,
And humble deprecation, thus reply'd.

Let not my words offend thee, heavenly Power,
My Maker, be propitious while I speak. 380

Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,
And these inferior far beneath me set ?

Among unequals what society

Can sort, what harmony, or true delight ?

Which must be mutual, in proportion due, 385

Giv'n and receiv'd ; but in disparity,

The one intense, the other still remiss,

Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove

Tedious alike : of fellowship I speak

Such as I seek, fit to participate 390

All rational delight, wherein the brute

Cannot be human consort : they rejoice

Each with their kind, lion with lioness ;

So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd ;

Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl, 395

So well converse, nor with the ox the ape ;
 Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.

Whereto th' Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.

A nice and subtle happiness I see
 Thou to thyself proposest, in the choice 400
 Of thy associates, Adam, and wilt taste
 No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.
 What think'st thou then of me, and this my state ?
 Seem I to thee sufficiently possess
 Of happiness, or not ? who am alone 405
 From all eternity ; for none I know
 Second to me or like, equal much less,
 How have I then with whom to hold converse,
 Save with the creatures which I made, and those
 To me inferior, infinite descents 410
 Beneath what other creatures are to thee ?

He ceas'd, I lowly answer'd. To attain
 The height and depth of thy eternal ways
 All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things ;
 Thou in thyself art perfect, and in thee 415
 Is no deficiency found : not so is man,
 But in degree ; the cause of his desire
 By conversation with his like to help
 Or solace his defects. No need that thou
 Should'st propagate, already infinite, 420
 And through all numbers absolute, though one.
 But man by number is to manifest
 His single imperfection, and beget

⁴⁰⁷ *Second*] Hor. Od. i. xii. 18.

'Nec viget quidquam simile, aut secundum.' *Newton.*

Like of his like, his image multiply'd,
 In unity defective, which requires 425
 Collateral love, and dearest amity.
 Thou in thy secrecy although alone,
 Best with thy self accompany'd, seek'st not
 Social communication ; yet so pleas'd
 Canst raise thy creature to what height thou wilt 430
 Of union or communion, deify'd ;
 I by conversing cannot these erect
 From prone, nor in their ways complacency find.
 Thus I embolden'd spake, and freedom us'd
 Permissive, and acceptance found ; which gain'd 435
 This answer from the gracious Voice Divine.

Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd,
 And find thee knowing not of beasts alone,
 Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thy self,
 Expressing well the spirit within thee free, 440
 My image, not imparted to the brute ;
 Whose fellowship therefore, unmeet for thee,
 Good reason was thou freely should'st dislike.
 And be so minded still : I, ere thou spak'st,
 Knew it not good for man to be alone, 445
 And no such company as then thou saw'st
 Intended thee, for trial only brought,
 To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet.
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,
 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 550
 Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.

He ended, or I heard no more ; for now
 My earthly by his heavenly overpower'd,

Which it had long stood under, strain'd to the height
 In that celestial colloquy sublime, 465
 As with an object that excels the sense,
 Dazzled, and spent, sunk down, and sought repair
 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd
 By nature as in aid, and clos'd mine eyes.
 Mine eyes he clos'd, but open left the cell 460
 Of fancy, my internal sight, by which
 Abstract as in a trance me thought I saw,
 Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape
 Still glorious before whom awake I stood ;
 Who stooping open'd my left side, and took 465
 From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,
 And life-blood streaming fresh ; wide was the wound,
 But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd.
 The rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands :
 Under his forming hands a creature grew 470
 Manlike, but different sex, so lovely fair,
 That what seem'd fair in all the world, seem'd now
 Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd
 And in her looks, which from that time infus'd
 Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before, 475
 And into all things from her air inspir'd
 The spirit of love and amorous delight.
 She disappear'd, and left me dark, I wak'd
 To find her, or for ever to deplore

468 the shape] the same. *Benl. MS.*

475 unfelt] Fairfax's Tasso, xix. 94.

'A sweetness strange from that sweet voice's sound
 Pierced my heart.'

Bowle.

Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure. 480
 When out of hope, behold her, not far off,
 Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd
 With what all earth or heaven could bestow
 To make her amiable : on she came,
 Led by her heavenly Maker, though unseen, 485
 And guided by his voice, nor uninform'd
 Of nuptial sanctity and marriage rites :
 Grace was in all her steps, heaven in her eye,
 In every gesture dignity and love.
 I overjoy'd could not forbear aloud. 490

This turn hath made amends ; thou hast fulfill'd
 Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign,
 Giver of all things fair, but fairest this
 Of all thy gifts, nor enviest. I now see
 Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself 495
 Before me ; woman is her name, of man
 Extracted ; for this cause he shall forego
 Father and mother, and to his wife adhere ;
 And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.

She heard me thus, and though divinely brought, 500
 Yet innocence and virgin modesty, 501
 Her virtue and the conscience of her worth,
 That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won,
 Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retir'd,

488 *heaven*] Fletcher's Philaster, act iii. scene 1.

'How *Heaven* is in your *eyes*.' Todd.

502 *conscience*] For consciousness. So Cic. de Senectute:
 '*Conscientia* bene actæ vitæ jucundissima est,' and in the
 English version of the Bible, Heb. x. 2. 'Should have no
 more *conscience* of sins.' Pearce.

The more desirable, or, to say all, 505
 Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,
 Wrought in her so, that seeing me she turn'd;
 I follow'd her; she what was honour knew,
 And with obsequious majesty approv'd
 My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bower 510
 I led her blushing like the morn: all heaven,
 And happy constellations on that hour
 Shed their selectest influence; the earth
 Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill;
 Joyous the birds; fresh gales and gentle airs 515
 Whisper'd it to the woods, and from their wings
 Flung rose, flung odours from the spicy shrub,
 Disporting, till the amorous bird of night
 Sung spousal, and bid haste the ev'ning star
 On his hill top to light the bridal lamp. 520

Thus I have told thee all my state, and brought
 My story to the sum of earthly bliss,
 Which I enjoy, and must confess to find
 In all things else delight indeed, but such
 As, us'd or not, works in the mind no change, 525
 Nor vehement desire; these delicacies [flowers,
 I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and
 Walks, and the melody of birds: but here
 Far otherwise, transported I behold,
 Transported touch; here passion first I felt, 530

511 *blushing*] Fletcher's *F. Shepherd*, act. i. scene 1.

—— 'O you are fairer far

Than the chaste *blushing morn*.' *Todd*.

515 *birds*] Herds. *Bentl. MS.*

Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else
 Superior and unmov'd, here only weak
 Against the charm of beauty's powerful glance.
 Or nature fail'd in me, and left some part
 Not proof enough such object to sustain, 535
 Or from my side subducting took perhaps
 More than enough ; at least on her bestow'd
 Too much of ornament, in outward show
 Elaborate, of inward less exact.
 For well I understand in the prime end 540
 Of nature her th' inferior, in the mind
 And inward faculties, which most excel ;
 In outward also her resembling less
 His image who made both, and less expressing
 The character of that dominion given 545
 O'er other creatures : yet when I approach
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems
 And in herself complete, so well to know
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say
 Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best : 550
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls
 Degraded, wisdom in discourse with her
 Loses discountenanc'd, and like folly shows :
 Authority and reason on her wait,
 As one intended first, not after made 555
 Occasionally ; and, to consummate all,
 Greatness of mind and nobleness their seat
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe
 About her, as a guard angelic plac'd.

558 *Loses discountenanc'd*] 'Looks disconcerted.' *Bentl. MS.*

To whom the angel with contracted brow. 560
 Accuse not nature, she hath done her part;
 Do thou but thine, and be not diffident
 Of wisdom; she deserts thee not, if thou
 Dismiss not her, when most thou need'st her nigh,
 By attributing overmuch to things 565
 Less excellent, as thou thyself perceiv'st.
 For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so?
 An outside? fair no doubt, and worthy well
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,
 Not thy subjection: weigh with her thyself; 570
 Then value: oft times nothing profits more
 Than self esteem, grounded on just and right
 Well manag'd: of that skill the more thou know'st,
 The more she will acknowledge thee her head,
 And to realities yield all her shows; 575
 Made so adorn for thy delight the more,
 So awful, that with honour thou may'st love
 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.
 But if the sense of touch, whereby mankind
 Is propagated, seem such dear delight 580
 Beyond all other, think the same vouchsaf'd
 To cattle and each beast; which would not be

560 *contracted brow*]

'To whom the angel, whose severer brow
 Sent forth a frown.' —

See Quarles' *Divine Poems*, p. 250; and *Shepherd's Oracle*, p. 60.

576 *adorn*] v. Spens. *F. Qu.* iii. xii. 20.

'Without *adorne* of gold, or silver bright.' *Bowle*.

To them made common and divulg'd, if aught
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue
 The soul of man, or passion in him move. 585
 What higher in her society thou find'st
 Attractive, human, rational, love still :
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,
 Wherein true love consists not : love refines
 The thoughts, and heart enlarges ; hath his seat
 In reason, and is judicious ; is the scale 591
 By which to heavenly love thou may'st ascend,
 Not sunk in carnal pleasure ; for which cause
 Among the beasts no mate for thee was found.

To whom thus half abash'd Adam reply'd. 595
 Neither her outside form'd so fair, nor aught
 In procreation common to all kinds
 (Though higher of the genial bed by far,
 And with mysterious reverence I deem,) 600
 So much delights me, as those graceful acts,
 Those thousand decencies that daily flow
 From all her words and actions, mix'd with love
 And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd
 Union of mind, or in us both one soul ;
 Harmony to behold in wedded pair 605
 More grateful than harmonious sound to the ear.
 Yet these subject not ; I to thee disclose
 What inward thence I feel, not therefore foil'd,
 Who meet with various objects, from the sense

⁵⁹⁸ *genial bed*] 'Genialis Lectuli.' Arnob. lib. iv. c. 20.
 Apuleius de Asino. 'Fœdus thori genialis. v. Orellium ad
 Arnob. vol. ii. p. 219.

Variously representing; yet still free 610
 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.
 To love thou blam'st me not, for love thou say'st
 Leads up to heaven, is both the way and guide;
 Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask:
 Love not the heavenly spirits, and how their love
 Express they? by looks only? or do they mix 615
 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?

To whom the angel with a smile that glow'd
 Celestial rosy red, love's proper hue,
 Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st
 Us happy, and without love no happiness. 621
 Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st,
 And pure thou wert created, we enjoy
 In eminence, and obstacle find none
 Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars: 625
 Easier than air with air, if spirits embrace,
 Total they mix, union of pure with pure
 Desiring; nor restrain'd conveyance need
 As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.
 But I can now no more; the parting sun 630
 Beyond the earth's Green Cape and Verdant Isles,
 Hesperean sets, my signal to depart.
 Be strong, live happy, and love, but first of all
 Him whom to love is to obey, and keep
 His great command; take heed lest passion sway
 Thy judgment to do aught, which else free will 635

⁶³¹ *Green Cape*] See Lisle's *Du Bartas*, p. 94.

'Thrusts out the Cape of Fesse, the *green Cape* and the white.'

Would not admit; thine and of all thy sons
 The weal or woe in thee is plac'd; beware.
 I in thy persevering shall rejoice,
 And all the blest: stand fast; to stand or fall 640
 Free in thine own arbitrement it lies;
 Perfect within, no outward aid require,
 And all temptation to transgress repel.

So saying, he arose; whom Adam thus
 Follow'd with benediction. Since to part, 645
 Go, heavenly guest, ethereal messenger,
 Sent from whose sov'reign goodness I adore.
 Gentle to me and affable hath been
 Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever
 With grateful memory: thou to mankind 650
 Be good and friendly still, and oft return.

So parted they, the angel up to heaven
 From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower.

637 *admit*] Used in the Latin sense, as in Ter. Heaut. act v. sc. ii. 'Quid ego tantum sceleris *admissi* miser?' *Newton*.

641 *Free*] See Dante *Il Purgat.* c. xxvii. v. 189.

'Non aspettar mio dir più, nè mio cenno.
 Libero, dritto, e sano è tuo arbitrio;
 E fallo fora non fare a suo senno.'

658 *bower*] Compare the parting of Jupiter and Thetis in *Hom. Il. i.* 531.

—ή μὲν ἔπειτα

Ἔως ἄλλα ἄλτο βαθεῖαν ἀπ' αἰγλήεντος Ὀλύμπου,
 Ζεὺς δὲ ἔδν πρὸς δῶμα. *Todd*

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IX.

THE ARGUMENT.

SATAN having compassed the earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by night into Paradise, and enters into the serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart: Adam consents not, alleging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarned, should attempt her found alone: Eve loath to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart; the rather desirous to make trial of her strength: Adam at last yields: the serpent finds her alone; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve, wondering to hear the serpent speak, asks how he attained to human speech and such understanding, not till now; the serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attained both to speech and reason, till then void of both: Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the Tree of Knowledge forbidden; the serpent, now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat: she, pleased with the taste, deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam, or not; at last brings him of the fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof: Adam at first amazed, but perceiving her lost, resolves, through vehemence of love, to perish with her, and extenuating the trespass eats also of the fruit: the effects thereof in them both: they seek to cover their nakedness: then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

No more of talk where GOD or angel guest
 With man, as with his friend, familiar us'd
 To sit indulgent, and with him partake
 Rural repast, permitting him the while
 Venial discourse unblam'd: I now must change
 Those notes to tragic; foul distrust, and breach
 Disloyal on the part of man, revolt, 7
 And disobedience: on the part of heaven
 Now alienated, distance and distaste,
 Anger, and just rebuke, and judgment given, 10
 That brought into this world a world of woe;
 Sin and her shadow death, and misery
 Death's harbinger: sad task, yet argument
 Not less but more heroic than the wrath
 Of stern Achilles on his foe pursu'd 15
 Thrice fugitive about Troy wall; or rage
 Of Turnus for Lavinia disespous'd,
 Or Neptune's ire or Juno's, that so long
 Perplex'd the Greek and Cytherea's son:
 If answerable style I can obtain 20
 Of my celestial patroness, who deigns
 Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,
 And dictates to me slumb'ring, or inspires

¹¹ *world*] Atterbury proposed reading

'That brought into this world (a world of woe),'

but such is not Milton's manner.

¹¹ *a world of woe*] See Davison's Poetical Rhapsody, ii. 178. ed. 1826.

'a private hell, a very world of woe.'

Easy my unpremeditated verse :
 Since first this subject for heroic song 35
 Pleas'd me, long choosing and beginning late ;
 Not sedulous by nature to indite
 Wars, hitherto the only argument
 Heroic deem'd, chief mastery to dissect
 With long and tedious havock fabled knights 30
 In battles feign'd ; the better fortitude
 Of patience and heroic martyrdom
 Unsung ; or to describe races and games,
 Or tilting furniture, emblazon'd shields,
 Impresses quaint, caparisons and steeds, 35
 Bases and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights
 At joust and tournament ; then marshal'd feast
 Serv'd up in hall with sewers, and seneshals ;
 The skill of artifice or office mean,
 Not that which justly gives heroic name 40
 To person or to poem. Me, of these
 Nor skill'd nor studious, higher argument
 Remains, sufficient of itself to raise
 That name, unless an age too late, or cold
 Climate, or years, damp my intended wing 45
 Depress'd ; and much they may, if all be mine,
 Not hers who brings it nightly to my ear.
 The sun was sunk, and after him the star

⁴¹ *of these*] The construction adopted by Milton occurs in Harrington's *Ariosto*, c. iv. st. 42.

'As holy men *of* humane manners *skill'd*.' *Todd*.

⁴⁵ *years*] Grief, want, wars, clime, or say, years. *Bentl.*
MS.

Found unsuspected way. There was a place,
Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the
change, 70

Where Tigris at the foot of Paradise
Into a gulf shot under ground, till part
Rose up a fountain by the Tree of Life :
In with the river sunk, and with it rose
Satan involv'd in rising mist, then sought 75
Where to lie hid ; sea he had search'd and land
From Eden over Pontus, and the pool
Mæotis, up beyond the river Ob ;
Downward as far Antarctic ; and in length
West from Orontes to the ocean barr'd 80
At Darien ; thence to the land where flows
Ganges and Indus : thus the orb he roam'd
With narrow search ; and with inspection deep
Consider'd every creature, which of all
Most opportune might serve his wiles, and found 85
The serpent subtlest beast of all the field.
Him after long debate, irresolute
Of thoughts revolv'd, his final sentence chose
Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom
To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90
From sharpest sight : for in the wily snake
Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark,
As from his wit and native subtilty
Proceeding, which in other beasts observ'd

⁷⁵ *mist*] Hom. II. i. 859, ἀνέδν πολῆς ἀλλος, ἡδὲ δμύλην,
and Hymn Mercur. v. 141. *Newton*.

⁸⁰ *Orontes*] Euphrates. *Bentl. MS.*

Doubt might beget of diabolic power 96
Active within beyond the sense of brute.
Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grief
His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd.

O earth, how like to heaven, if not preferr'd
More justly, seat worthier of gods, as built 100
With second thoughts, reforming what was old !
For what god after better worse would build ?
Terrestrial heaven, danc'd round by other heavens
That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,
Light above light, for thee alone, as seems, 105
In thee concentrating all their precious beams
Of sacred influence. As GOD in heaven
Is centre, yet extends to all, so thou
Centring receiv'st from all those orbs : in thee,
Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears
Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth
Of creatures animate with gradual life
Of growth, sense, reason, all summ'd up in man.
With what delight could I have walk'd thee round,
If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange 115
Of hill and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,
Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,
Rocks, dens, and caves ! but I in none of these
Find place or refuge ; and the more I see
Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege

⁹⁶ *earth*] Consult Heylin's note on this passage ; who considers that there is an inconsistency between this speech of Satan and b. iii. 586.

Of contraries ; all good to me becomes 122
 Bane, and in heaven much worse would be my state.
 But neither here seek I, no nor in heaven
 To dwell, unless by mast'ring heaven's Supreme ;
 Nor hope to be myself less miserable 126
 By what I seek, but others to make such
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound :
 For only in destroying I find ease
 To my relentless thoughts ; and him destroy'd, 130
 Or won to what may work his utter loss,
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon
 Follow, as to him link'd in weal or woe ;
 In woe then ; that destruction wide may range.
 To me shall be the glory sole among 136
 The infernal powers, in one day to have marr'd
 What he, Almighty styl'd, six nights and days
 Continu'd making, and who knows how long
 Before had been contriving, though perhaps
 Not longer than since I in one night freed 140
 From servitude inglorious well nigh half
 Th' angelic name, and thinner left the throng
 Of his adorers. He to be aveng'd,
 And to repair his numbers thus impair'd,
 Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd 146
 More angels to create, if they at least
 Are his created, or to spite us more,
 Determin'd to advance into our room

¹³⁰ *him*] Milton sometimes uses the oblique case for the case absolute: so. b. vii. 142, '*us* dispossessed:' Sams. Ag. 463, '*me* overthrown:' and see Jortin's note, 312.

A creature form'd of earth, and him endow,
 Exalted from so base original, 150
 With heavenly spoils, our spoils : what he decreed
 He effected ; man he made, and for him built
 Magnificent this world, and earth his seat,
 Him lord pronounc'd, and, O indignity !
 Subjected to his service angel wings, 155
 And flaming ministers, to watch and tend
 Their earthy charge. Of these the vigilance
 I dread, and to elude, thus wrapp'd in mist
 Of midnight vapour, glide obscure, and pry
 In every bush and brake, where hap may find 160
 The serpent sleeping, in whose mazy folds
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
 O foul descent ! that I, who erst contended
 With gods to sit the highest, am now constrain'd
 Into a beast, and mix'd with bestial slime, 165
 This essence to incarnate and imbrute,
 That to the height of deity aspir'd ;
 But what will not ambition and revenge
 Descend to ? who aspires must down as low
 As high he soar'd, obnoxious first or last 170
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
 Bitter ere long back on itself recoils :
 Let it ; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next
 Provokes my envy, this new favourite 175
 Of heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,

Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker rais'd
From dust : spite then with spite is best repaid.

So saying, through each thicket dank or dry,
Like a black mist low creeping, he held on ¹⁸⁵
His midnight search, where soonest he might find
The serpent : him fast sleeping soon he found,
In labyrinth of many a round self-roll'd,
His head the midst, well stor'd with subtle wiles :
Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den, ¹⁸⁶
Nor nocent yet, but on the grassy herb,
Fearless, unfear'd he slept. In at his mouth
The devil enter'd, and his brutal sense,
In heart or head, possessing, soon inspir'd
With act intelligential ; but his sleep ¹⁸⁹
Disturb'd not, waiting close th' approach of morn.

Now, when as sacred light began to dawn
In Eden on the humid flowers, that breathe
Their morning incense, when all things that breathe
From th' earth's great altar send up silent praise
To the Creator, and his nostrils fill ¹⁹⁰
With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,
And join'd their vocal worship to the quire
Of creatures wanting voice ; that done, partake
The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs : ²⁰⁰
Then commune, how that day they best may ply

¹⁷⁸ *spite*] Æsch. Prom. 970.

(ὁπώρας ὑβρίζειν τοὺς ὑβρίζοντας χρεών. Richardson.

¹⁸⁶ *Nor nocent*] So the second and subsequent editions. In the first it is 'Not nocent yet.' Newton.

¹⁸⁶ *grassy herb*] Virg. Ecl. v. 26, 'graminis herbam.'

Newton.

Their growing work ; for much their work outgrew
 The hands' dispatch of two gard'ning so wide.
 And Eve first to her husband thus began.

Adam, well may we labour still to dress 208
 This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flow'r,
 Our pleasant task enjoin'd ; but till more hands
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows,
 Luxurious by restraint ; what we by day
 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind, 210
 One night or two with wanton growth derides,
 Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,
 Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present ;
 Let us divide our labours, thou where choice
 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind
 The woodbine round this arbour, or direct 215
 The clasping ivy where to climb, while I
 In yonder spring of roses intermix'd
 With myrtle find what to redress till noon :
 For while so near each other thus all day 220
 Our task we choose, what wonder if so near
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
 Casual discourse draw on ; which intermits
 Our day's work, brought to little, though begun
 Early, and th' hour of supper comes unearn'd. 225

To whom mild answer Adam thus return'd.

218 *hear* | 'Or bear' in the second ed. 'Or hear' in the first. No other editions vary.

218 *spring of roses* | See Herrick's Poems, p. 392,

'——— Where a spring

Of roses have an endless flourishing.'

A *spring* is a 'small thicket or coppice.'

Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond
 Compare above all living creatures dear,
 Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts
 employ'd,

How we might best fulfill the work which here ²²⁰
 God hath assign'd us, nor of me shall pass
 Unprais'd ; for nothing lovelier can be found
 In woman, than to study household good,
 And good works in her husband to promote.
 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd ²²⁵
 Labour, as to debar us when we need
 Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,
 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
 Of looks and smiles ; for smiles from reason flow,
 To brute deny'd, and are of love the food ; ²³⁰
 Love, not the lowest end of human life.
 For not to irksome toil, but to delight,
 He made us, and delight to reason join'd. [hands
 These paths and bowers doubt not but our joint
 Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide ²³⁵
 As we need walk, till younger hands ere long
 Assist us : but if much converse perhaps
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield :
 For solitude sometimes is best society,
 And short retirement urges sweet return. ²⁴⁰
 But other doubt possesses me, lest harm

²²⁴ *These*] So in all the early editions till that of Tonson, 1711, which reads 'The paths,' a mistake followed by Tickell, Fenton, and Bentley. *Todd*.

²⁴⁰ *For*] This line is an Alexandrine.

Doubt might beget of diabolic power 98
 Active within beyond the sense of brute.
 Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grief
 His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd.

O earth, how like to heaven, if not preferr'd
 More justly, seat worthier of gods, as built 100
 With second thoughts, reforming what was old !
 For what god after better worse would build ?
 Terrestrial heaven, danc'd round by other heavens
 That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,
 Light above light, for thee alone, as seems, 105
 In thee concentrating all their precious beams
 Of sacred influence. As GOD in heaven
 Is centre, yet extends to all, so thou
 Centring receiv'st from all those orbs : in thee,
 Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears
 Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth
 Of creatures animate with gradual life
 Of growth, sense, reason, all summ'd up in man.
 With what delight could I have walk'd thee round,
 If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange 115
 Of hill and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,
 Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,
 Rocks, dens, and caves ! but I in none of these
 Find place or refuge ; and the more I see
 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120
 Torment within me, as from the hateful siege

⁹⁹ *earth*] Consult Heylin's note on this passage ; who considers that there is an inconsistency between this speech of Satan and b. iii. 566.

Of contraries ; all good to me becomes 122
 Bane, and in heaven much worse would be my state.
 But neither here seek I, no nor in heaven
 To dwell, unless by mast'ring heaven's Supreme ;
 Nor hope to be myself less miserable 126
 By what I seek, but others to make such
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound :
 For only in destroying I find ease
 To my relentless thoughts ; and him destroy'd, 130
 Or won to what may work his utter loss,
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon
 Follow, as to him link'd in weal or woe ;
 In woe then ; that destruction wide may range.
 To me shall be the glory sole among 136
 The infernal powers, in one day to have marr'd
 What he, Almighty styl'd, six nights and days
 Continu'd making, and who knows how long
 Before had been contriving, though perhaps
 Not longer than since I in one night freed 140
 From servitude inglorious well nigh half
 Th' angelic name, and thinner left the throng
 Of his adorers. He to be aveng'd,
 And to repair his numbers thus impair'd,
 Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd 146
 More angels to create, if they at least
 Are his created, or to spite us more,
 Determin'd to advance into our room

¹³⁰ *him*] Milton sometimes uses the oblique case for the case absolute: so. b. vii. 142, '*us* dispossessed:' Sams. Ag. 468, '*me* overthrown:' and see Jortin's note, 312.

A creature form'd of earth, and him endow,
 Exalted from so base original, 150
 With heavenly spoils, our spoils : what he decreed
 He effected ; man he made, and for him built
 Magnificent this world, and earth his seat,
 Him lord pronounc'd, and, O indignity !
 Subjected to his service angel wings, 155
 And flaming ministers, to watch and tend
 Their earthy charge. Of these the vigilance
 I dread, and to elude, thus wrapp'd in mist
 Of midnight vapour, glide obacure, and pry
 In every bush and brake, where hap may find 160
 The serpent sleeping, in whose mazy folds
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
 O foul descent ! that I, who erst contended
 With gods to sit the highest, am now constrain'd
 Into a beast, and mix'd with bestial slime, 165
 This essence to incarnate and imbrute,
 That to the height of deity aspir'd ;
 But what will not ambition and revenge
 Descend to ? who aspires must down as low
 As high he soar'd, obnoxious first or last 170
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
 Bitter ere long back on itself recoils :
 Let it ; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next
 Provokes my envy, this new favourite 175
 Of heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,

¹⁵⁷ charge] v. 1 Corinth. 15. *Bentl. MS.*

Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker rais'd
From dust : spite then with spite is best repaid.

So saying, through each thicket dank or dry,
Like a black mist low creeping, he held on ¹⁸⁵
His midnight search, where soonest he might find
The serpent : him fast sleeping soon he found,
In labyrinth of many a round self-roll'd,
His head the midst, well stor'd with subtle wiles :
Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den, ¹⁸⁵
Nor nocent yet, but on the grassy herb,
Fearless, unfear'd he slept. In at his mouth
The devil enter'd, and his brutal sense,
In heart or head, possessing, soon inspir'd
With act intelligential ; but his sleep ¹⁹⁰
Disturb'd not, waiting close th' approach of morn.

Now, when as sacred light began to dawn
In Eden on the humid flowers, that breathe
Their morning incense, when all things that breathe
From th' earth's great altar send up silent praise
To the Creator, and his nostrils fill ¹⁹⁵
With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,
And join'd their vocal worship to the quire
Of creatures wanting voice ; that done, partake
The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs : ²⁰⁰
Then commune, how that day they best may ply

¹⁷⁸ *spite*] Æsch. Prom. 970.

(ὄντως ἐβρίζεον τοὺς ἐβρίζοντας χρεών. Richardson.

¹⁸⁶ *Nor nocent*] So the second and subsequent editions. In the first it is 'Not nocent yet.' Newton.

¹⁸⁶ *grassy herb*] Virg. Ecl. v. 26, 'graminis herbam.'

Newton.

Their growing work ; for much their work outgrew
 The hands' dispatch of two gard'ning so wide.
 And Eve first to her husband thus began.

Adam, well may we labour still to dress 205
 This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flow'r,
 Our pleasant task enjoin'd ; but till more hands
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows,
 Luxurious by restraint ; what we by day
 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind, 210
 One night or two with wanton growth derides,
 Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,
 Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present ;
 Let us divide our labours, thou where choice
 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind
 The woodbine round this arbour, or direct 215
 The clasping ivy where to climb, while I
 In yonder spring of roses intermix'd
 With myrtle find what to redress till noon :
 For while so near each other thus all day 220
 Our task we choose, what wonder if so near
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
 Casual discourse draw on ; which intermits
 Our day's work, brought to little, though begun
 Early, and th' hour of supper comes unearn'd. 225
 To whom mild answer Adam thus return'd.

²¹⁸ *hear*] 'Or bear' in the second ed. 'Or hear' in the first. No other editions vary.

²¹⁸ *spring of roses*] See Herrick's Poems, p. 392,
 '————— Where a spring

Of roses have an endless flourishing.'

A spring is a 'small thicket or coppice.'

Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond
 Compare above all living creatures dear,
 Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts
 employ'd,
 How we might best fulfill the work which here ²³⁰
 God hath assign'd us, nor of me shall pass
 Unprais'd ; for nothing lovelier can be found
 In woman, than to study household good,
 And good works in her husband to promote.
 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd ²³⁵
 Labour, as to debar us when we need
 Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,
 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
 Of looks and smiles ; for smiles from reason flow,
 To brute deny'd, and are of love the food ; ²⁴⁰
 Love, not the lowest end of human life.
 For not to irksome toil, but to delight,
 He made us, and delight to reason join'd. [hands
 These paths and bowers doubt not but our joint
 Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide ²⁴⁵
 As we need walk, till younger hands ere long
 Assist us : but if much converse perhaps
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield :
 For solitude sometimes is best society,
 And short retirement urges sweet return. ²⁵⁰
 But other doubt possesses me, lest harm

²⁴⁴ *These*] So in all the early editions till that of Tonson, 1711, which reads 'The paths,' a mistake followed by Tickell, Fenton, and Bentley. *Todd*.

²⁴⁹ *For*] This line is an Alexandrine.

Befall thee sever'd from me ; for thou know'st
 What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame 265
 By sly assault : and somewhere nigh at hand
 Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find
 His wish and best advantage, us asunder,
 Hopeless to circumvent us join'd, where each
 To other speedy aid might lend at need ; 270
 Whether his first design be to withdraw
 Our fealty from GOD, or to disturb
 Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss
 Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more ;
 Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side 275
 That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects.
 The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,
 Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,
 Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.
 To whom the virgin majesty of Eve, 276
 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets
 With sweet austere composure thus reply'd.
 Offspring of heaven and earth, and all earth's lord,
 That such an enemy we have, who seeks
 Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn, 277

270 *virgin*] Virg. Ecl. vi. 47, calls Pasiphæe virgin, after she had three children. Ovid, Hyps. Jas. 133, calls Medea 'Adultera virgo.' *Richardson*. The word 'puella' is used with the same latitude. On this expression see Valcknaer ad Catulli Epig. Callimach. p. 188, Virgo Intacta, pro Muliere virum passa, sed Casta. Schrader ad Musæum, p. 304. Theocr. Idyll. ii. 136.

And from the parting angel overheard,
 As in a shady nook I stood behind,
 Just then return'd at shut of evening flowers.
 But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt
 To GOD or thee, because we have a foe 280
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.
 His violence thou fear'st not, being such,
 As we, not capable of death or pain,
 Can either not receive, or can repel.
 His fraud is then thy fear, which plain infers 285
 Thy equal fear, that my firm faith and love
 Can by his fraud be shaken or seduc'd : [breast,
 Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy
 Adam, misthought of her to thee so dear?
 To whom with healing words Adam reply'd.
 Daughter of God and man, immortal Eve,
 For such thou art, from sin and blame entire :
 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade
 Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid
 Th' attempt itself, intended by our foe : 290
 For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses
 The tempted with dishonour foul, suppos'd
 Not incorruptible of faith, not proof
 Against temptation. Thou thyself with scorn
 And anger wouldst resent the offer'd wrong, 295
 Though ineffectual found : misdeem not then,
 If such affront I labour to avert
 From thee alone, which on us both at once
 The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare,
 Or daring, first on me th' assault shall light. 300

Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn ;
 Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce
 Angels; nor think superfluous others' aid.
 I from the influence of thy looks receive
 Access in every virtue, in thy sight 310
 More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were
 Of outward strength ; while shame, thou looking on,
 Shame to be overcome or over-reach'd,
 Would utmost vigour raise, and rais'd unite.
 Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel
 When I am present, and thy trial choose 315
 With me, best witness of thy virtue try'd ?

So spake domestic Adam in his care
 And matrimonial love ; but Eve, who thought
 Less attributed to her faith sincere, 320
 Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd.

If this be our condition, thus to dwell
 In narrow circuit straiten'd by a foe,
 Subtle or violent, we not endu'd
 Single with like defence, wherever met, 325
 How are we happy, still in fear of harm ?
 But harm precedes not sin : only our foe
 Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem
 Of our integrity : his foul esteem
 Sticks no dishonour on our front, but turns 330
 Foul on himself ; then wherefore shunn'd or fear'd
 By us ? who rather double honour gain
 From his surmise prov'd false, find peace within,
 Favour from heaven, our witness, from th' event.

315 *thy*] Fenton reads '*the* trial.'

And what is faith, love, virtue, unassay'd ■■■
 Alone, without exterior help sustain'd?
 Let us not then suspect our happy state
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,
 As not secure to single or combin'd.
 Frail is our happiness, if this be so, 340
 And Eden were no Eden thus expos'd.

To whom thus Adam fervently reply'd.
 O woman, best are all things as the will
 Of GOD ordain'd them; his creating hand
 Nothing imperfect or deficient left ■■■
 Of all that he created, much less man,
 Or aught that might his happy state secure,
 Secure from outward force; within himself
 The danger lies, yet lies within his power:
 Against his will he can receive no harm. 350
 But GOD left free the will, for what obeys
 Reason is free, and reason he made right;
 But bid her well be ware, and still erect,
 Lest by some fair appearing good surpriz'd
 She dictate false, and misinform the will ■■■
 To do what GOD expressly hath forbid.
 Not then mistrust, but tender love enjoins,
 That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.
 Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve,
 Since reason not impossibly may meet ■■■
 Some specious object by the foe suborn'd,
 And fall into deception unaware,
 Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.
 Seek not temptation then, which to avoid

Were better, and most likely, if from me 305
 Thou sever not: trial will come unsought.
 Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve
 First thy obedience; th' other who can know,
 Not seeing thee attempted, who attest?
 But if thou think trial unsought may find 370
 Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,
 Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;
 Go in thy native innocence, rely
 On what thou hast of virtue, summon all;
 For GOD towards thee hath done his part, do
 thine. 375

So spake the patriarch of mankind, but Eve
 Persisted, yet submiss, though last, reply'd.
 With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd,
 Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words
 Touch'd only, that our trial, when least sought,
 May find us both perhaps far less prepar'd, 381
 The willinger I go, nor much expect
 A foe so proud will first the weaker seek;
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.
 Thus saying, from her husband's hand her
 hand 385

Soft she withdrew; and like a wood-nymph light
 Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's train,
 Betook her to the groves; but Delia's self
 In gait surpass'd and goddess-like deport,
 Though not as she with bow and quiver arm'd 390
 But with such gard'ning tools as art, yet rude,
 Guiltless of fire had form'd, or angels brought.

To Pales, or Pomona, thus adorn'd,
 Likest she seem'd — Pomona when she fled
 Vertumnus — or to Ceres in her prime, 395
 Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove.
 Her long with ardent look his eye pursu'd
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay :
 Oft he to her his charge of quick return
 Repeated, she to him as oft engag'd 400
 To be return'd by noon amid the bow'r,
 And all things in best order to invite
 Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.
 O much deceiv'd, much failing, hapless Eve,
 Of thy presum'd return ! event perverse ! 405
 Thou never from that hour in paradise
 Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose ;

³⁹⁴ *Likest*] So in Milton's first ed.; in the second, by mistake, it is printed 'Likeliest.' *Newton*.

³⁹⁴ *fled*] Not when Pomona fled Vertumnus, but when she had her tools. *Bentl. MS.*

³⁹⁶ *virgin*] This expression, 'Virgin of Proserpina,' however violent or uncommon it may be, is doubtless that which Milton gave. I once conjectured that it might have been written 'or,' as I do not think Pearce's objection of force. Proserpine certainly, as he says, 'had nothing to do with husbandry or gardening;' but, like Eve, she was gathering flowers, an employment sufficiently similar for a poetical comparison; but I think Milton would not have resembled Eve to both the mother and the daughter; his active imagination, and learned memory, would have supplied him with another name:—and this idiom, though uncommon, is in Milton's manner: it is considered 'noble' by Lord Monboddo, and 'elegant' by Warburton; besides, 'Proserpina from Jove' would be a construction more violent than the one admitted.

Such ambush hid among sweet flowers and shades
 Waited with hellish rancor imminent
 To intercept thy way, or send thee back 410
 Despoil'd of innocence, of faith, of bliss.
 For now, and since first break of dawn the fiend,
 Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come,
 And on his quest, where likeliest he might find
 The only two of mankind, but in them 415
 The whole included race, his purpos'd prey.
 In bow'r and field he sought, where any tuft
 Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,
 Their tendance or plantation for delight;
 By fountain or by shady rivulet 420
 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find
 Eve separate; he wish'd, but not with hope
 Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,
 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,
 Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood, 425
 Half spy'd, so thick the roses bushing round
 About her glow'd, oft stooping to support
 Each flow'r of slender stalk, whose head, though gay,
 Carnation, purple, azure, or speck'd with gold,
 Hung drooping unsustain'd; them she upstays

⁴⁰⁸ *hid*] In Tonson's ed. 1711, it is printed

'Such ambush laid,'

which reading has been followed by Tickell, Fenton, and Bentley. Newton restored the genuine reading '*hid*.' *Todd*.

⁴²⁴ *separate*] See Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. vi. st. 215, and A. Ramsæi *Poem. Sacr.* p. 26.

'Incomitata viro, forte uxor sola, per hortum,
 Regali incedit gressu.'

Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while,
 Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,
 From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.
 Nearer he drew, and many a walk travers'd
 Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm, ⁴³⁸
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen
 Among thick-woven arborets and flowers
 Imborder'd on each bank, the hand of Eve :
 Spot more delicious than those gardens feign'd
 Or of reviv'd Adonis, or renown'd ⁴⁴⁰
 Alcinous, host of old Laertes' son,
 Or that, not mystic, where the sapient king
 Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.
 Much he the place admir'd, the person more.
 As one who long in populous city pent ⁴⁴³
 Where houses thick and sewers annoy the air,
 Forth issuing on a summer's morn to breathe
 Among the pleasant villages and farms
 Adjoin'd, from each thing met conceives delight,
 The smell of grain, or tedded grass, or kine, ⁴⁵⁰
 Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound ;
 If chance with nymph-like step fair virgin pass,
 What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more,
 She most, and in her look sums all delight :

⁴³⁸ *and bold*] Voluble in folds. *Bentl. MS.*

⁴³⁸ *Imborder'd*] 'Imborder' is one of those Miltonic words of which Johnson takes no notice in his dictionary. *Todd.*

⁴⁴⁵ *populous*] See Sylvester's *Du Bartas*, p. 40.

⁴⁵⁴ *She most*] So Petrarch. *de Remed. Ut. Fortunæ. ii. 96.*
 'Non videbis amodo frondosas valles, aereos montes, flo

Such pleasure took the serpent to behold 455
 This flowery plat, the sweet recess of Eve
 Thus early, thus alone : her heavenly form
 Angelic, but more soft and feminine,
 Her graceful innocence, her every air
 Of gesture or least action, over-aw'd 460
 His malice, and with rapine sweet bereav'd
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought.
 That space the evil one abstracted stood
 From his own evil, and for the time remain'd
 Stupidly good, of enmity disarm'd, 465
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge ;
 But the hot hell that always in him burns,
 Though in mid heaven, soon ended his delight,
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees
 Of pleasure not for him ordain'd : then soon 470
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites. [sweet
 Thoughts, whither have ye led me ! with what
 Compulsion thus transported to forget
 What hither brought us ! hate, not love ; nor hope
 Of Paradise for hell, hope here to taste 475
 Of pleasure ; but all pleasure to destroy,
 Save what is in destroying ; other joy
 To me is lost. Then let me not let pass
 Occasion which now smiles ; behold alone 480
 The woman opportune to all attempts,

*reos cespites, umbrosos specus, lucidos fontes, vaga flumina,
 prata virentia, quodque pulcherrimum visu discunt, humani oris
 effigiem.*

Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,
 Whose higher intellectual more I shun,
 And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb
 Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould; 485
 Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,
 I not: so much hath hell debas'd, and pain
 Infeebled me, to what I was in heaven.
 She fair, divinely fair, fit love for gods,
 Not terrible, though terror be in love, 490
 And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate,
 Hate stronger under show of love well feign'd;
 The way which to her ruin now I tend.

So spake the enemy of mankind, enclos'd
 In serpent, inmate bad, and toward Eve 495
 Address'd his way, not with indented wave,
 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear,
 Circular base of rising folds, that tower'd

496 *intended*] v. Dionys. Perig. ver. 123.

Ὡς δὲ δράκων βλοσυρωπὸς ἐλίσσεται ἀγκύλος ἔρπων.

A. Dyce.

496 *wave*] So Arati Phænomena. 45.

Τὰς δὲ δὲ ἀμφοτέρας, οἷη ποταμοῖο ἀπορρῶξ,
 Εἰλείται, μέγα θαῦμα, δράκων.

497 *on his rear*] See Ovidii Metam. lib. xv. ver. 673.

'Pectoribusque tenuis media sublimis in æde

Constitit; atque oculos circumtulit igne micantes!'

498 *tower'd*] Very similar is the description of the Serpent
 in the Adamus Exsul of Grotius. p. 38.

—— 'Oculi ardent duo,

Adrecta cervix surgit, et maculis nitet

Pectus superbis. Cæculis picti notis

Sinuantur orbes. tortiles spiræ micant

Were better, and most likely, if from me 305
 Thou sever not: trial will come unsought.
 Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve
 First thy obedience; th' other who can know,
 Not seeing thee attempted, who attest?
 But if thou think trial unsought may find 370
 Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,
 Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;
 Go in thy native innocence, rely
 On what thou hast of virtue, summon all;
 For God towards thee hath done his part, do
 thine. 375

So spake the patriarch of mankind, but Eve
 Persisted, yet submiss, though last, reply'd.
 With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd,
 Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words
 Touch'd only, that our trial, when least sought,
 May find us both perhaps far less prepar'd, 381
 The willinger I go, nor much expect
 A foe so proud will first the weaker seek;
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.

Thus saying, from her husband's hand her
 hand 385
 Soft she withdrew; and like a wood-nymph light
 Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's train,
 Betook her to the groves; but Delia's self
 In gait surpass'd and goddess-like deport,
 Though not as she with bow and quiver arm'd 390
 But with such gard'ning tools as art, yet rude,
 Guiltless of fire had form'd, or angels brought.

To Pales, or Pomona, thus adorn'd,
 Likest she seem'd—Pomona when she fled
 Vertumnus— or to Ceres in her prime, 393
 Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove.
 Her long with ardent look his eye pursu'd
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay:
 Oft he to her his charge of quick return
 Repeated, she to him as oft engag'd 400
 To be return'd by noon amid the bow'r,
 And all things in best order to invite
 Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.
 O much deceiv'd, much failing, hapless Eve,
 Of thy presum'd return! event perverse! 405
 Thou never from that hour in paradise
 Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose;

394 *Likest*] So in Milton's first ed.; in the second, by mistake, it is printed 'Likeliest.' *Newton*.

394 *fled*] Not when Pomona fled Vertumnus, but when she had her tools. *Bentl. MS.*

396 *virgin*] This expression, 'Virgin of Proserpina,' however violent or uncommon it may be, is doubtless that which Milton gave. I once conjectured that it might have been written 'or,' as I do not think Pearce's objection of force. Proserpine certainly, as he says, 'had nothing to do with husbandry or gardening;' but, like Eve, she was gathering flowers, an employment sufficiently similar for a poetical comparison; but I think Milton would not have resembled Eve to both the mother and the daughter; his active imagination, and learned memory, would have supplied him with another name:—and this idiom, though uncommon, is in Milton's manner: it is considered 'noble' by Lord Monboddo, and 'elegant' by Warburton; besides, 'Proserpina from Jove' would be a construction more violent than the one admitted.

Such ambush hid among sweet flowers and shades
 Waited with hellish rancor imminent
 To intercept thy way, or send thee back 410
 Despoil'd of innocence, of faith, of bliss.
 For now, and since first break of dawn the fiend,
 Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come,
 And on his quest, where likeliest he might find
 The only two of mankind, but in them 415
 The whole included race, his purpos'd prey.
 In bow'r and field he sought, where any tuft
 Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,
 Their tendance or plantation for delight;
 By fountain or by shady rivulet 420
 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find
 Eve separate; he wish'd, but not with hope
 Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,
 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,
 Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood, 425
 Half spy'd, so thick the roses bushing round
 About her glow'd, oft stooping to support
 Each flow'r of slender stalk, whose head, though gay,
 Carnation, purple, azure, or speck'd with gold,
 Hung drooping unsustain'd; them she upstays

406 *hid*] In Tonson's ed. 1711, it is printed

'Such ambush laid,'

which reading has been followed by Tickell, Fenton, and Bentley. Newton restored the genuine reading '*hid*.' Todd.

424 *separate*] See Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. vi. st. 215, and A. Ramsæi *Poem. Sacr.* p. 26.

'Incomitata viro, forte uxor sola, per hortum,
 Regali incedit gressu.'



Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while,
 Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,
 From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.
 Nearer he drew, and many a walk travers'd
 Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm, 438
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen
 Among thick-woven arborets and flowers
 Imborder'd on each bank, the hand of Eve :
 Spot more delicious than those gardens feign'd
 Or of reviv'd Adonis, or renown'd 440
 Alcinous, host of old Laertes' son,
 Or that, not mystic, where the sapient king
 Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.
 Much he the place admir'd, the person more.
 As one who long in populous city pent 445
 Where houses thick and sewers annoy the air,
 Forth issuing on a summer's morn to breathe
 Among the pleasant villages and farms
 Adjoin'd, from each thing met conceives delight,
 The smell of grain, or tedded grass, or kine, 450
 Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound ;
 If chance with nymph-like step fair virgin pass,
 What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more,
 She most, and in her look sums all delight :

⁴³⁸ *and bold*] Voluble in folds. *Bentl. MS.*

⁴³⁸ *Imborder'd*] 'Imborder' is one of those Miltonic words of which Johnson takes no notice in his dictionary. *Todd.*

⁴⁴⁵ *populous*] See Sylvester's *Du Bartas*, p. 40.

⁴⁵⁴ *She most*] So Petrarch. *de Remed. Ut. Fortunæ. ii. 96.*
 'Non videbis amodo frondosas valles, aereos montes, flo

Such pleasure took the serpent to behold 465
 This flowery plat, the sweet recess of Eve
 Thus early, thus alone : her heavenly form
 Angelic, but more soft and feminine,
 Her graceful innocence, her every air
 Of gesture or least action, over-aw'd 470
 His malice, and with rapine sweet bereav'd
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought.
 That space the evil one abstracted stood
 From his own evil, and for the time remain'd
 Stupidly good, of enmity disarm'd, 475
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge ;
 But the hot hell that always in him burns,
 Though in mid heaven, soon ended his delight,
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees
 Of pleasure not for him ordain'd : then soon 479
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites. [sweet
 Thoughts, whither have ye led me ! with what
 Compulsion thus transported to forget
 What hither brought us ! hate, not love ; nor hope
 Of Paradise for hell, hope here to taste 478
 Of pleasure ; but all pleasure to destroy,
 Save what is in destroying ; other joy
 To me is lost. Then let me not let pass
 Occasion which now smiles ; behold alone 480
 The woman opportune to all attempts,

*reos cespites, umbrosos specus, lucidos fontes, vaga flumina,
 prata virentia, quodque pulcherrimum visu dicunt, humani oris
 effigiem.*

Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,
 Whose higher intellectual more I shun,
 And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb
 Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould ; 485
 Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,
 I not : so much hath hell debas'd, and pain
 Infeebled me, to what I was in heaven.
 She fair, divinely fair, fit love for gods,
 Not terrible, though terror be in love, 490
 And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate,
 Hate stronger under show of love well feign'd ;
 The way which to her ruin now I tend.

So spake the enemy of mankind, enclos'd
 In serpent, inmate bad, and toward Eve 495
 Address'd his way, not with indented wave,
 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear,
 Circular base of rising folds, that tower'd

496 *intended*] v. Dionys. Perig. ver. 123.

Ὡς δὲ δράκων βλοσυρωπὸς ἐλίσσεται ἀγκύλος ἔρπων.

A. Dycæ.

496 *wave*] So Arati Phænomena. 45.

Τὰς δὲ δι' ἀμφοτέρας, ὅλη ποταμοῖο ἀποβῶδξ,
 Εἰλεῖται, μέγα θαῦμα, δράκων.

497 *on his rear*] See Ovidii Metam. lib. xv. ver. 673.

'Pectoribusque tenus media sublimis in æde
 Constitit; atque oculos circumtulit igne micantes!'

498 *tower'd*] Very similar is the description of the Serpent
 in the Adamus Exsul of Grotius. p. 33.

—— 'Oculi ardent duo,

Adrecta cervix surgit, et maculis nitet
 Pectus superbis. Cæruleis picti notis
 Sinuantur orbes. tortiles spiræ micant

Fold above fold a surging maze, his head
 Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes ; 500
 With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, erect
 Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass
 Floated redundant : pleasing was his shape,
 And lovely, never since of serpent kind
 Lovelier, not those that in Illyria chang'd 505
 Hermione and Cadmus, or the god
 In Epidaurus ; nor to which transform'd
 Ammonian Jove or Capitoline was seen,
 He with Olympias, this with her who bore 508
 Scipio the height of Rome. With tract oblique
 At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd
 To interrupt, side-long he works his way.
 As when a ship by skilful steersman wrought
 Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind
 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail ; 515
 So vary'd he, and of his tortuous train
 Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve,
 To lure her eye ; she busied heard the sound
 Of rustling leaves, but minded not, as us'd
 To such disport before her through the field, 520
 From every beast, more duteous at her call,
 Than at Circean call the herd disguis'd.

Auri colore, lubricum longos sinus

Tendit volumen, terga se in gyros plicant.'

502 *circūg]* Coiling. Curling. 517. *Bentl. MS.*

522 *herd]* See *Ov. Met. xiv. 45.*

' ———perque ferarum

Agmen adulantim media procedit ab aulâ.' Todd.



He bolder now uncall'd before her stood ;
 But as in gaze admiring : oft he bow'd
 His turret crest, and sleek enamel'd neck, 524
 Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.
 His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length
 The eye of Eve to mark his play ; he glad
 Of her attention gain'd, with serpent tongue
 Organic, or impulse of vocal air, 526
 His fraudulent temptation thus began.

Wonder not, sov'reign mistress, if perhaps
 Thou canst, who art sole wonder, much less arm
 Thy looks, the heav'n of mildness, with disdain,
 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze 528
 Insatiate ; I thus single ; nor have fear'd
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine

524 *bow'd*] See Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. vi. st. 237.

'Thrice did he bow his flatt'ring neck, and thrice
 His silent homage he presented her.'

So Grotii *Adam. Exsul.* p. 38.

'Nunc se reclinat flexile in collum caput.'

525 *crest*] See Dante *Il Purgator.* canto viii. v. 100.

'Tra l' erba e i fior venia la mala striscia,
 Volgendo ad or ad or la testa, e 'l dosso
 Leccando, come bestia che si liscia.'

526 *lick'd*] A. Ramsæi *Poem. Sacr.* p. 27.

'Illi adversa ferens vestigia tortilis anguis,
 Ut molles aditus, et commoda tempora novit,
 Ante pedes prono se vultu sternit heriles,
 Adlambensque imas plantas, sic callidus infit.'

By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore 540
 With ravishment beheld ! there best beheld
 Where universally admir'd : but here
 In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,
 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except 545
 Who sees thee ? and what is one ? who shouldst be
 A goddess among gods, ador'd and serv'd [seen
 By angels numberless, thy daily train.

So gloz'd the tempter, and his proem tun'd ;
 Into the heart of Eve his words made way, 550
 Though at the voice much marvelling : at length
 Not unamaz'd she thus in answer spake.
 What may this mean ? Language of man pronounc'd
 By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd ?
 The first at least of these I thought deny'd 555
 To beasts, whom GOD on their creation-day
 Created mute to all articulate sound ;
 The latter I demur, for in their looks
 Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears.
 Thee, serpent, subtlest beast of all the field 560
 I knew, but not with human voice endu'd ;
 Redouble then this miracle, and say,
 How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how
 To me so friendly grown above the rest
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight ? 565
 Say, for such wonder claims attention due.

To whom the guileful tempter thus reply'd.
 Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve,

568 resplendent] Transcendent. Bentl. MS.

Easy to me it is to tell thee all [obey'd.
 What thou command'st, and right thou shouldst be
 I was at first as other beasts that graze
 The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,
 As was my food, nor aught but food discern'd
 Or sex, and apprehended nothing high :
 Till on a day roving the field, I chanc'd 575
 A goodly tree far distant to behold
 Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mixt,
 Ruddy and gold: I nearer drew to gaze ;
 When from the boughs a savoury odour blown,
 Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense 580
 Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats
 Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at ev'n,
 Unsuck'd of lamb or kid, that tend their play.
 To satisfy the sharp desire I had
 Of tasting those fair apples, I resolv'd 585
 Not to defer ; hunger and thirst at once,
 Powerful persuaders, quicken'd at the scent
 Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keen.
 About the mossy trunk I wound me soon,
 For high from ground the branches would require
 Thy utmost reach or Adam's : round the tree
 All other beasts that saw with like desire,
 Longing and envying, stood, but could not reach.
 Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill 595

⁵⁸¹ *fennel*] See Prose Works, i. p. 239. ' That gave him to
 see clearer than any *fennel-rubb'd serpent*.'

I spar'd not, for such pleasure till that hour
At feed or fountain never had I found.
Sated at length, ere long I might perceive
Strange alteration in me, to degree
Of reason in my inward powers, and speech 600
Wanted not long, though to this shape retain'd.
Thenceforth to speculations high or deep
I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind
Consider'd all things visible in heaven,
Or earth, or middle, all things fair and good ; 605
But all that fair and good in thy divine
Semblance and in thy beauty's heav'nly ray
United I beheld ; no fair to thine
Equivalent or second, which compell'd
Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come 610
And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd
Sov'reign of creatures, universal dame.

So talk'd the spirited sly snake ; and Eve,
Yet more amaz'd, unwary thus reply'd.
Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt 615
The virtue of that fruit, in thee first prov'd :
But say, where grows the tree ? from hence how far ?
For many are the trees of GOD that grow
In Paradise, and various, yet unknown
To us, in such abundance lies our choice, 620
As leaves a greater store of fruit untouch'd,
Still hanging incorruptible, till men
Grow up to their provision, and more hands
Help to disburden nature of her birth.

To whom the wily adder, blithe and glad. 625



Empress, the way is ready, and not long ;
 Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,
 Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past
 Of blowing myrrh and balm : if thou accept
 My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon. 630

Lead then, said Eve. He leading swiftly roll'd
 In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,
 To mischief swift : hope elevates, and joy
 Brightens his crest : as when a wand'ring fire
 Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night 635
 Condenses, and the cold environs round,
 Kindled through agitation to a flame,
 Which oft, they say, some evil spirit attends,
 Hovering and blazing with delusive light, 640
 Misleads th' amaz'd night-wanderer from his way
 To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool,
 There swallow'd up and lost, from succour far :
 So glisten'd the dire snake, and into fraud
 Led Eve our credulous mother, to the tree
 Of prohibition, root of all our woe : 645
 Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

630 *myrrh and balm*] A. Ramsæi Poem Sacr. p. 28.

' Quid memorem Zephyri spirantia flamina stacten ?
 Et myrrhæ lacrymas, stillantes vulnere matris ? '

640 *Misleads*] So Mids. N. Dream, act ii. sc. 1.

' *Misleads night wanderers*, laughing at their harm.'

Todd.

645 *fraud*] 'Fraud' signifies hurt, damage. Virg. *Æn.*
 x. 72.

' Quis deus in fraudem, quæ dura potentia nostri
 Eggit ? ' *Newton.*

Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,
 Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess,
 The credit of whose virtue rest with thee,
 Wond'rous indeed, if cause of such effects. 656
 But of this tree we may not taste nor touch,
 GOD so commanded; and left that command
 Sole daughter of his voice; the rest, we live
 Law to ourselves; our reason is our law.

To whom the tempter guilefully reply'd. 657
 Indeed! hath GOD then said that of the fruit
 Of all these garden trees ye shall not eat,
 Yet lords declar'd of all in earth or air?

To whom thus Eve yet sinless. Of the fruit
 Of each tree in the garden we may eat; 658
 But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst
 The garden, GOD hath said, ye shall not eat
 Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die. [bold

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more
 The tempter, but with show of zeal and love 659
 To man, and indignation at his wrong,
 New part puts on; and, as to passion mov'd,
 Fluctuates disturb'd, yet comely, and in act
 Rais'd, as of some great matter to begin.
 As when of old some orator renown'd 670
 In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence [dress'd,
 Flourish'd, since mute, to some great cause ad-
 Stood in himself collected, while each part,
 Motion, each act won audience ere the tongue;
 Sometimes in height began, as no delay 675
 Of preface brooking through his zeal of right:

So standing, moving, or to height upgrown,
The tempter all impassion'd thus began.

O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving plant,
Mother of science, now I feel thy power 830
Within me clear, not only to discern
Things in their causes, but to trace the ways
Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.
Queen of this universe, do not believe
Those rigid threats of death; ye shall not die: 835
How should ye? by the fruit? it gives you life
To knowledge: by the threatener? look on me,
Me who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,
And life more perfect have attain'd than fate
Meant me, by vent'ring higher than my lot. 840
Shall that be shut to man, which to the beast
Is open? or will God incense his ire
For such a petty trespass, and not praise
Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain
Of death denounc'd, whatever thing death be, 845
Deterr'd not from achieving what might lead
To happier life, knowledge of good and evil?
Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil
Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?

⁸³⁶ *How*] In Milton's own edition the passage is thus improperly pointed.

How should ye? by the fruit? it gives you life

To knowledge? by the threatener, look on me.

Tickell follows Tonson's early editions in retaining the note of interrogation after knowledge, but in supplying another after 'threatener.' Fenton corrected the error, and he has been since followed. *Todd*.

Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,
Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess,
The credit of whose virtue rest with thee,
Wond'rous indeed, if cause of such effects. 654
But of this tree we may not taste nor touch,
God so commanded; and left that command
Sole daughter of his voice; the rest, we live
Law to ourselves; our reason is our law.

To whom the tempter guilefully reply'd. 655
Indeed! hath God then said that of the fruit
Of all these garden trees ye shall not eat,
Yet lords declar'd of all in earth or air?

To whom thus Eve yet sinless. Of the fruit
Of each tree in the garden we may eat; 656
But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst
The garden, God hath said, ye shall not eat
Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die. [bold

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more
The tempter, but with show of zeal and love 658
To man, and indignation at his wrong,
New part puts on; and, as to passion mov'd,
Fluctuates disturb'd, yet comely, and in act
Rais'd, as of some great matter to begin.
As when of old some orator renown'd 670
In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence [dress'd,
Flourish'd, since mute, to some great cause ad-
Stood in himself collected, while each part,
Motion, each act won audience ere the tongue;
Sometimes in height began, as no delay 675
Of preface brooking through his zeal of right:

So standing, moving, or to height upgrown,
The tempter all impassion'd thus began.

O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving plant,
Mother of science, now I feel thy power 630
Within me clear, not only to discern
Things in their causes, but to trace the ways
Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.
Queen of this universe, do not believe
Those rigid threats of death; ye shall not die: 635
How should ye? by the fruit? it gives you life
To knowledge: by the threatener? look on me,
Me who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,
And life more perfect have attain'd than fate
Meant me, by vent'ring higher than my lot. 640
Shall that be shut to man, which to the beast
Is open? or will God incense his ire
For such a petty trespass, and not praise
Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain
Of death denounc'd, whatever thing death be, 645
Deterr'd not from achieving what might lead
To happier life, knowledge of good and evil?
Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil
Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?

⁶⁸⁶ *How*] In Milton's own edition the passage is thus improperly pointed.

How should ye? by the fruit? it gives you life
To knowledge? by the threatener, look on me.

Tickell follows Tonson's early editions in retaining the note of interrogation after knowledge, but in supplying another after 'threatener.' Fenton corrected the error, and he has been since followed. *Todd*.

God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just ; 700
 Not just, not God ; not fear'd then, nor obey'd :
 Your fear itself of death removes the fear.
 Why then was this forbid ? Why but to awe,
 Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,
 His worshippers ; he knows that in the day 705
 Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear,
 Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then
 Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as gods,
 Knowing both good and evil as they know.
 That ye should be as gods, since I as man, 710
 Internal man, is but proportion meet,
 I, of brute, human ; ye of human, gods.
 So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off
 Human, to put on gods ; death to be wish'd,
 Though threaten'd, which no worse than this can
 bring. 715
 And what are gods that man may not become
 As they, participating godlike food ?
 The gods are first, and that advantage use
 On our belief, that all from them proceeds ;
 I question it, for this fair earth I see, 720
 Warm'd by the sun, producing every kind,
 Them nothing : if they all things, who enclos'd
 Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,
 That whoso eats thereof forthwith attains 724
 Wisdom without their leave ? and wherein lies
 Th' offence, that man should thus attain to know ?
 What can your knowledge hurt him, or this tree
 Impart against his will if all be his ?

Or is it envy ; and can envy dwell
 In heavenly breasts ? These, these and many more
 Causes import your need of this fair fruit. 731
 Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste.

He ended, and his words replete with guile
 Into her heart too easy entrance won :
 Fix'd on the fruit she gaz'd, which to behold 735
 Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound
 Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd
 With reason, to her seeming, and with truth :
 Mean while the hour of noon drew on, and wak'd
 An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell 740
 So savoury of that fruit, which with desire,
 Inclinal now grown to touch or taste,
 Solicited her longing eye ; yet first
 Pausing a while, thus to herself she mus'd. 744

Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,
 Though kept from man, and worthy to be admir'd,
 Whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay
 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught

735 *behold*] Grotii *Adamus Exsul*, p. 2.

' ——— *Pomi dulcis aspectu color,
 Gustus cupido, quod volo, spondent mihi.*'


741 *fruit*] v. Beaumont's *Psyche*, vi. 252.

' These charms still ope the door into the heart
 Of careless Eve, and thrust their poison in,
 Besides the smiling apples plaid their part,
 And her affections with her eye did win.'

745 *Great*] So in the *Adamus Exsul* of Grotius, Eve addresses the fruit, p. 45.

' *O dulce pomum ! quam tua hæc species meis
 Adridet oculis ! quam vel olfactus juvat !*'

The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise :
Thy praise he also who forbids thy use 750
Conceals not from us, naming thee the Tree
Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil ;
Forbids us then to taste ! but his forbidding
Commends thee more, while it infers the good
By thee communicated, and our want : 755
For good unknown sure is not had, or had
And yet unknown is as not had at all.
In plain then, what forbids he but to know,
Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise ?
Such prohibitions bind not. But if death 760
Bind us with after-bands, what profits then
Our inward freedom ? In the day we eat
Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die.
How dies the serpent ? he hath eaten and lives,
And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,
Irrational till then. For us alone 765
Was death invented ? or to us deny'd
This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd ?
For beasts it seems : yet that one beast which first
Hath tasted envies not, but brings with joy 770
The good befallen him, author unsuspect,
Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.
What fear I then ? rather what know to fear
Under this ignorance of good and evil,
Of GOD or death, of law or penalty ? 775
Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,
Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,
Of virtue to make wise : what hinders then



To reach, and feed at once both body and mind?

So saying, her rash hand in evil hour 780
 Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat:
 Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat
 Sighing through all her works gave signs of woe,
 That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk
 The guilty serpent, and well might, for Eve, 785
 Intent now wholly on her taste, naught else
 Regarded; such delight till then, as seem'd,
 In fruit she never tasted, whether true
 Or fancy'd so, through expectation high
 Of knowledge; nor was godhead from her thought.
 Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint, 791
 And knew not eating death: satiate at length,

⁷⁸² *wound*] See Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. vi. st. 254.

'Up went her desperate hand, and reach'd away
 All the world's blesse; whilst she the apple took;
 When, loe, the earth did move; the heavens did stay,
 Beasts and birds shiver'd; absent Adam shook.'

⁷⁸³ *Nature*] v. the *Sarcotis* of *Maschnius* on the same subject, lib. ii.

'Natura nefas horrescere visa,
 Pondere tam gravium cœpit titubare malorum.'
 'Tota anceps Natura stetit.'
 'Tellus infecta veneno
 Obstupuit.'

⁷⁸⁴ *slunk*] So in the *Adamus Exsul* of Grotius, p. 47, after the success of the temptation, Sathan says,

'Ego ad latebras tacitus abrepam meas.'

⁷⁹² *knew not*] A Greek phrase used by the Latins. v. Opp. *Halient.* ii. 106.

οὐδ' ἐνοήσαν ἐν σπεύδοντες ὀλεθρον. *Richardson.*

And heighten'd as with wine, jocund and boon,
Thus to herself she pleasingly began.

O sov'reign, virtuous, precious of all trees 795
In Paradise! of operation blest
To sapience; hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,
And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end
Created: but henceforth my early care,
Not without song, each morning, and due praise
Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease 801
Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;
Till dieted by thee I grow mature
In knowledge, as the gods who all things know;
Though others envy what they cannot give; 805
For had the gift been theirs, it had not here
Thus grown. Experience, next, to thee I owe,
Best guide; not following thee, I had remain'd
In ignorance; thou open'st wisdom's way,
And giv'st access, though secret she retire. 810
And I perhaps am secret; heaven is high,
High and remote to see from thence distinct
Each thing on earth: and other care perhaps
May have diverted from continual watch
Our great Forbidder, safe with all his spies 815
About him. But to Adam in what sort
Shall I appear? shall I to him make known

795 *precious*] The positive for the superlative. As Virgil,
Æn. iv. 676.

'Sequimur te, *sancte* Deorum.' *Richardson.*

807 *Experience*] 'Thee Serpent.' *Benl. MS.*

As yet my change, and give him to partake
 Full happiness with me, or rather not,
 But keep the odds of knowledge in my power ⁸⁸⁰
 Without copartner? so to add what wants
 In female sex, the more to draw his love,
 And render me more equal, and perhaps,
 A thing not undesirable, sometime
 Superior; for inferior who is free? ⁸⁸⁵
 This may be well: but what if GOD have seen,
 And death ensue? then I shall be no more,
 And Adam wedded to another Eve
 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
 A death to think. Confirm'd then I resolve, ⁸⁹⁰
 Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe:
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
 I could endure; without him live no life.

So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd,
 But first low reverence done, as to the power ⁸⁹⁵
 That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd
 Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd

⁸¹⁸ *give*] Newton has observed the beauty of this expression, and traced it through the Greek and Latin. See Hom. Il. i. 18. Virg. *Æn.* i. 66. 79. 523; and before in P. L. i. 736.

'——— and gave to rule,

Each in his hierarchy, the orders bright.'

And iii. 248.

⁸¹⁸ *partake*]

'O persuavis gustus! O tenero sapor
 Gratus palato! quam tuus succus juvat!
 Quam me beasti! Restat hoc unum modo,
 Tanti ut maritus particeps fiat boni.'

Grotii Adam. Ecceul. p. 47.

From nectar, drink of gods. Adam the while,
 Waiting desirous her return, had wove
 Of choicest flowers a garland to adorn 840
 Her tresses, and her rural labours crown,
 As reapers oft are wont their harvest queen:
 Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new
 Solace in her return, so long delay'd;
 Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill, 845
 Misgave him; he the falt'ring measure felt;
 And forth to meet her went, the way she took
 That morn when first they parted. By the Tree
 Of Knowledge he must pass; there he her met,
 Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand 850
 A bough of fairest fruit that downy smil'd,
 New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.
 To him she hasted, in her face excuse
 Came prologue, and apology too prompt, 854
 Which with bland words at will she thus address'd.

⁸⁴⁵ *divine*] See Hor. Od. iii. xxvii. 10.

'Imbrium divina avis imminentum.'

and P. L. x. 357. *Newton*.

⁸⁴⁶ *falt'ring measure felt*] "I consider these words as obscure. They must, I presume, be interpreted as meaning, 'That Adam secretly felt some symptoms of the great change impressed on Nature by Eve's transgression.'" MS. Diary of Thomas Green, Esq. But the clearer explanation, I consider, is, 'Adam felt the faltering (or imperfect) measure of that 'great joy he promis'd,' and 'solace in her return.' Doubts mingling with his hope made the measure of joy falter, or be deficient.

⁸⁵⁴ *too*] This is Fenton's emendation; before, in all the editions it was 'to prompt,' which Newton considers to be an

Hast thou not wonder'd, Adam, at my stay?
 Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long, depriv'd
 Thy presence, agony of love till now
 Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more
 Mean I to try, what rash untry'd I sought, 860
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange
 Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear:
 This tree is not, as we are told, a tree
 Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown
 Op'ning the way, but of divine effect 865
 To open eyes, and make them gods who taste;
 And hath been tasted such. The serpent wise,
 Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying,
 Hath eaten of the fruit, and is become
 Not dead, as we are threaten'd, but thenceforth
 Endu'd with human voice and human sense, 871
 Reasoning to admiration, and with me
 Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I
 Have also tasted, and have also found
 Th' effects to correspond; opener mine eyes, 875
 Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart,
 And growing up to Godhead: which for thee
 Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.
 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss,
 Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon. 880

error of the press, and Todd thinks might have been the genuine text.

880 *unshar'd with thee*] A. Ramsæi P. Sacr. p. 32.

' ——— sed te sine, cœlum,

Te sine, dulce nihil! Terrisne, inglorius erro,
 Subsides imis?'

Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot
 May join us, equal joy, as equal love;
 Lest thou not tasting, different degree
 Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce
 Deity for thee, when fate will not permit. 885

Thus Eve with countenance blithe her story told;
 But in her cheek distemper flushing glow'd.
 On th' other side, Adam, soon as he heard
 The fatal trespass done by Eve, amaz'd,
 Astonied stood and blank, while horror chill 890
 Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd;
 From his slack hand the garland wreath'd for Eve
 Down dropp'd, and all the faded roses shed:
 Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length
 First to himself he inward silence broke. 895

O fairest of creation, last and best
 Of all God's works, creature in whom excell'd
 Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,
 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!
 How art thou lost! how on a sudden lost, 900

890 *blank*] Virg. *Æn.* ii. 120.

'Obstupere animis, gelidusque per ima cucurrit
 Ossa tremor.'

and xii. 951. 'Illi solvuntur frigore membra.' *Hume.*

890 *horror chill*] So in Grotii *Adamus Exsul*, p. 48.

'Gelidus per artus vadit excussos tremor:
 Exsanguis adsto: crinis erectus riget:
 Vix ipse valido spiritus gemitu viam
 Prærupit.'

898 *dropp'd*] Mr. Bowle refers to *Propert.* [El. v. 8. 53], and
Pers. Sat. iii. 100.

Defac'd, deflower'd, and now to death devote!
 Rather how hast thou yielded to transgress
 The strict forbiddance, how to violate
 The sacred fruit forbidd'n! some cursed fraud
 Of enemy hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown, 908
 And me with thee hath ruin'd, for with thee
 Certain my resolution is to die:
 How can I live without thee! how forego
 Thy sweet converse and love so dearly join'd,
 To live again in these wild woods forlorn! 910
 Should God create another Eve, and I
 Another rib afford, yet loss of thee
 Would never from my heart: no no! I feel
 The link of nature draw me: flesh of flesh,
 Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state
 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe. 916
 So having said, as one from sad dismay
 Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd
 Submitting to what seem'd remediless,
 Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turn'd. 920
 Bold deed thou hast presum'd, advent'rous Eve,
 And peril great provok'd, who thus hast dar'd,
 Had it been only coveting to eye
 That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,
 Much more to taste it under ban to touch. 926

901 *devote*] Hor. Od. iv. xiv. 18.

'Devota morti pectora libera.' Todd.

922 *hast*] So it is in the first edition; in the second it is printed by mistake 'hath dar'd;' and that is followed by some others. Newton.

But past who can recall, or done undo?
 Not GOD omnipotent, nor Fate; yet so
 Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact
 Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,
 Profan'd first by the serpent, by him first 930
 Made common and unhallow'd ere our taste;
 Not yet on him found deadly; he yet lives,
 Lives, as thou said'st, and gains to live as man
 Higher degree of life, inducement strong
 To us, as likely tasting to attain 935
 Proportional ascent, which cannot be
 But to be gods, or angels, demigods.
 Nor can I think that GOD, creator wise,
 Though threat'ning, will in earnest so destroy
 Us his prime creatures, dignify'd so high, 940
 Set over all his works, which in our fall,
 For us created, needs with us must fail,
 Dependent made; so GOD shall uncreate,
 Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose;
 Not well conceiv'd of GOD; who, though his power
 Creation could repeat, yet would be loth
 Us to abolish, lest the adversary
 Triumph and say; Fickle their state whom GOD
 Most favours; who can please him long? Me first
 He ruin'd, now mankind; whom will he next? 945
 Matter of scorn, not to be given the foe.
 However I with thee have fix'd my lot,
 Certain to undergo like doom; if death

938 *past*] See Pind. Olymp. ii. 29; and Sophocles Trach. 742

τὸ γὰρ

φανθὲν τίς ἂν δύναι' ἂν ἀγένητον ποιεῖν.

Consort with thee, death is to me as life ;
 So forcible within my heart I feel 968
 The bond of nature draw me to my own,
 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine ;
 Our state cannot be sever'd, we are one,
 One flesh ; to lose thee were to lose myself.
 So Adam, and thus Eve to him reply'd. 990
 O glorious trial of exceeding love,
 Illustrious evidence, example high,
 Engaging me to emulate; but, short
 Of thy perfection, how shall I attain, 984
 Adam? from whose dear side I boast me sprung,
 And gladly of our union hear thee speak,
 One heart, one soul in both ; whereof good proof
 This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd,
 Rather than death or aught than death more dread
 Shall separate us link'd in love so dear, 970
 To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,
 If any be, of tasting this fair fruit,
 Whose virtue, for of good still good proceeds,
 Direct, or by occasion, hath presented
 This happy trial of thy love, which else 978
 So eminently never had been known.
 Were it I thought death menac'd would ensue
 This my attempt, I would sustain alone
 The worst, and not persuade thee, rather die
 Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact 980

978 *alone*] Eve says in the Adam. Exs. of Grotius, p. 54.

' ——— Omne ruat in me malum !

Si quod futurum est. Parcat! O parcat viro!

980 *oblige*] Newton has observed the force of 'oblige,' to

Pernicious to thy peace, chiefly assur'd
 Remarkably so late of thy so true,
 So faithful love unequal'd ; but I feel
 Far otherwise th' event, not death, but life
 Augmented, open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys, 985
 Taste so divine, that what of sweet before
 Hath touch'd my sense, flat seems to this and harsh.
 On my experience, Adam, freely taste,
 And fear of death deliver to the winds.

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy 990
 Tenderly wept, much won that he his love
 Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.
 In recompense, for such compliance bad
 Such recompense best merits, from the bough 995
 She gave him of that fair enticing fruit
 With liberal hand : he scrupled not to eat
 Against his better knowledge, not deceiv'd,
 But fondly overcome with female charm.
 Earth trembled from her entrails, as again 1000
 In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan,

render obnoxious to guilt or punishment. Cic. pro domo sua, viii. 'Cum populum Romanum scelere obligasses.' Fin. i. 14. and Hor. Od. ii. 8. 5.

'sed tu simul obligasti

Perfidum votis caput.'

989 winds] A sort of proverbial expression. Hor. Od. i. xxvi. i.

'——— Tristitiam et metus

Tradam protervis in mare Creticum

Portare ventis.'

Newton.

1001 Nature] See Virg. Georg. iv. 493, and Stat. Theb. xi. 410.

'Ter nigris avidus regnator ab oris

Sky lowr'd, and, mutt'ring thunder, some sad drops
 Wept at completing of the mortal sin
 Original ; while Adam took no thought,
 Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate 1005
 Her former trespass fear'd, the more to soothe
 Him with her lov'd society; that now,
 As with new wine intoxicated both,
 They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel
 Divinity within them breeding wings 1010
 Wherewith to scorn the earth : but that false fruit
 Far other operation first display'd,
 Carnal desire inflaming ; he on Eve
 Began to cast lascivious eyes, she him
 As wantonly repaid ; in lust they burn : 1015
 Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move.

Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,
 And elegant, of sapience no small part,
 Since to each meaning savour we apply,
 And palate call judicious ; I the praise 1020
 Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.
 Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd
 From this delightful fruit, nor known till now
 True relish, tasting ; if such pleasure be
 In things to us forbidden, it might be wish'd, 1025
 For this one tree had been forbidden ten.
 But come, so well refresh'd, now let us play,
 As meet is, after such delicious fare ;

*Intonuit, terque ima soli concussit, et ipsi
 Armorum fugere Dei.'*

and Val. Flac. viii. 117.

For never did thy beauty, since the day
 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd 1030
 With all perfections, so inflame my sense
 With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now
 Than ever, bounty of this virtuous tree.

So said he, and forbore not glance or toy
 Of amorous intent, well understood 1035
 Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.
 Her hand he seiz'd, and to a shady bank,
 Thick overhead with verdant roof imbower'd,
 He led her nothing loath; flowers were the couch,
 Pansies, and violets, and asphodel, 1040
 And hyacinth, earth's freshest softest lap.
 There they their fill of love and love's disport
 Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,
 The solace of their sin, till dewy sleep 1044
 Oppress'd them, wearied with their amorous play.
 Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit,
 That with exhilarating vapour bland
 About their spirits had play'd, and inmost powers
 Made err, was now exhal'd, and grosser sleep
 Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams 1050
 Encumber'd, now had left them, up they rose
 As from unrest, and, each the other viewing,

1044 *dewy sleep*] Π Πenseroso, 146. 'Entice the dewy
 feather'd sleep.' and Val. Flac. iv. 18, 'Liquidique potentia
 somni.' Lucret. iv. 905, 'Somnus quietem inriget.' Auctor
 Epit. Iliados, 120,

'———Ille sopore
 Corpus inundatum leni prostratus habebat.'

Soon found their eyes how open'd, and their minds
 How darken'd : innocence, that as a veil
 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone,
 Just confidence, and native righteousness,
 And honour from about them ; naked left
 To guilty shame ; he cover'd, but his robe
 Uncover'd more. So rose the Danite strong
 Herculean Samson from the harlot-lap 1060
 Of Philistean Dalilah, and wak'd
 Shorn of his strength ; they destitute and bare
 Of all their virtue : silent, and in face
 Confounded, long they sate, as stricken mute,
 Till Adam, though not less than Eve abash'd, 1068
 At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd.

O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear
 To that false worm, of whomsoever taught
 To counterfeit man's voice, true in our fall,
 False in our promis'd rising ; since our eyes 1070
 Open'd we find indeed, and find we know
 Both good and evil, good lost, and evil got,
 Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know,
 Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,
 Of innocence, of faith, of purity, 1078
 Our wonted ornaments now soil'd and stain'd,
 And in our faces evident the signs
 Of foul concupiscence ; whence evil store,

¹⁰⁶⁸ *shame*] After 'shame' there is no stop even in Milton's own editions, and there should have been a semicolon at least. 'Shame covered Adam and Eve with his robe ; but this robe of his uncovered them more.' v S. Agon. 841. *Newton*. v. Psalm cix. 28. *Bowle*.

Even shame, the last of evils ; of the first
 Be sure then. How shall I behold the face 1080
 Henceforth of God or angel, erst with joy
 And rapture so oft beheld ? those heavenly shapes
 Will dazzle now this earthly, with their blaze
 Insufferably bright. O might I here
 In solitude live savage, in some glade 1085
 Obscur'd, where highest woods, impenetrable
 To star or sun-light, spread their umbrage broad,
 And brown as evening : cover me, ye pines !
 Ye cedars, with innumerable boughs
 Hide me, where I may never see them more ! 1090
 But let us now, as in bad plight, devise
 What best may for the present serve to hide
 The parts of each from other, that seem most
 To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen ;
 Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together
 And girded on our loins, may cover round [sew'd,
 Those middle parts ; that this new comer, shame,
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.

So counsel'd he, and both together went
 Into the thickest wood ; there soon they chose 1100
 The figtree, not that kind for fruit renown'd,
 But such as at this day to Indians known

1086 *impenetrable*] v. Stat. Theb. x. 85.

—— 'nulli *penetrabilis astro*

Lucus iners.'

Newton.

1092 *for*] These lines misprinted in the second edition:

'What best may *from* the present serve to hide

The parts of each *for* other.

In Malabar or Decan spreads her arms 1103
 Branching so broad and long, that in the ground
 The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow
 About the mother tree, a pillar'd shade
 High overarch'd, and echoing walks between ;
 There oft the Indian herdsman shunning heat
 Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds
 At loopholes cut thro' thickest shade. Those leaves
 They gather'd broad, as Amazonian targe, 1111
 And with what skill they had together sew'd,
 To gird their waist, vain covering, if to hide
 Their guilt and dreaded shame ; O how unlike
 To that first naked glory ! Such of late 1115
 Columbus found th' American so girt
 With feather'd cincture, naked else and wild
 Among the trees on isles and woody shores.
 Thus fenc'd, and as they thought, their shame in
 Cover'd, but not at rest or ease of mind, [part
 They sat them down to weep; nor only tears
 Rain'd at their eyes, but high winds worse within
 Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,
 Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore
 Their inward state of mind, calm region once 1125
 And full of peace, now tost and turbulent :

1103 *Decan*] The most celebrated specimen of this tree in
 India, is one that entirely covers an island in the Nerbudda,
 about twelve miles above Broach. It is called Kuveer-Bur.
 See Heber's Travels in India, iii. 67, and Forbes' Orient.
 Mem. i. 274 iii. 246, 548. It is two thousand feet round,
 and has thirteen hundred and fifty trunks.

For understanding rul'd not, and the will
 Heard not her lore ; both in subjection now
 To sensual appetite, who from beneath
 Usurping over sov'reign reason claim'd 1130
 Superior sway : from thus distemper'd breast
 Adam, estrang'd in look and alter'd style,
 Speech intermitted thus to Eve renew'd. [stay'd

Would thou hadst hearken'd to my words, and
 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange
 Desire of wand'ring this unhappy morn
 I know not whence possess'd thee ; we had then
 Remain'd still happy, not, as now, despoil'd
 Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable. 1135
 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve
 The faith they owe ; when earnestly they seek
 Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail.

To whom soon mov'd with touch of blame thus
 Eve.

What words have pass'd thy lips, Adam severe,
 Imput'st thou that to my default, or will 1145
 Of wand'ring, as thou call'st it, which who knows
 But might as ill have happen'd thou being by,
 Or to thyself perhaps : hadst thou been there,
 Or here th' attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd
 Fraud in the serpent, speaking as he spake ; 1150
 No ground of enmity between us known,
 Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm.

1138 *both*] Fenton reads '*but* in subjection.'

1144 *words*] Compare Hom. Il. xiv. 83.

'Ατρείδῃ, ποῖόν σε ἔπος φέγειν ἔρκος ὀδόντων. *Thyer.*

Was I to have never parted from thy side?
 As good have grown there still a lifeless rib.
 Being as I am, why didst not thou the head 1165
 Command me absolutely not to go,
 Going into such danger, as thou said'st?
 Too facile then thou didst not much gainsay,
 Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.
 Hadst thou been firm and fix'd in thy dissent, 1160
 Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me.

To whom then first incens'd Adam reply'd.
 Is this the love, is this the recompence
 Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve! express'd
 Immutable when thou wert lost, not I, 1165
 Who might have liv'd and joy'd immortal bliss,
 Yet willingly chose rather death with thee?
 And am I now upbraided, as the cause
 Of thy transgressing, not enough severe,
 It seems, in thy restraint? what could I more?
 I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold 1171
 The danger, and the lurking enemy
 That lay in wait: beyond this had been force,
 And force upon free will hath here no place.
 But confidence then bore thee on, secure 1175
 Either to meet no danger, or to find
 Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps
 I also err'd in overmuch admiring

1165 *Immutable*] *Inimitable. Bentl. MS.*

1170 *thy*] 'So in the early editions; in Tsonson's, 1711, it is 'in *my* restraint,' which Tickell, Fenton, and Bentley have improperly followed.

What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought
No evil durst attempt thee; but I rue 1180
That error now, which is become my crime,
And thou th' accuser. Thus it shall befall
Him who to worth in women overtrusting
Lets her will rule; restraint she will not brook,
And left to herself, if evil thence ensue, 1185
She first his weak indulgence will accuse.

Thus they in mutual accusation spent
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,
And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK X.

THE ARGUMENT.

MAN's transgression known, the guardian angels forsake Paradise, and return up to heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approved, God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors; who descends, and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them both, and reascends. Sin and Death, sitting till then at the gates of hell, by wondrous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confined in hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of man: to make the way easier from hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad highway, or bridge, over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then, preparing for earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to hell: their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success against man: instead of applause, is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed, with himself also, suddenly into serpents, according to his doom given in Paradise; then, deluded with a show of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretells the final victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands his angels to make several alterations in the heavens and elements. Adam, more and more perceiving his fallen condition, heavily bewails; rejects the condolment of Eve;

she persists, and at length appeases him: then, to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not; but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be revenged on the serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

MEANWHILE the heinous and despicable act
Of Satan done in Paradise, and how
He in the serpent had perverted Eve,
Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,
Was known in heaven; for what can scape the eye
Of GOD all-seeing, or deceive his heart
Omniscient, who, in all things wise and just,
Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the mind
Of man, with strength entire, and freewill arm'd,
Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd 10
Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend!
For still they knew, and ought to have still re-
member'd

The high injunction not to taste that fruit,
Whoever tempted; which they not obeying
Incurr'd, what could they less? the penalty; 15
And, manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.

Up into heaven from Paradise in haste
Th' angelic guards ascended, mute and sad
For man; for of his state by this they knew,
Much wondering how the subtle fiend had stol'n 20
Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news
From earth arrived at heaven-gate, displeas'd
All were who heard; dim sadness did not spare

That time celestial visages, yet mix'd
 With pity, violated not their bliss. 35
 About the new-arriv'd in multitudes
 Th' ethereal people ran, to hear and know
 How all befell: they towards the throne supreme,
 Accountable, made haste to make appear
 With righteous plea their utmost vigilance, 30
 And easily approv'd; when the Most High
 Eternal Father, from his secret cloud,
 Amidst in thunder utter'd thus his voice.

Assembled angels, and ye powers return'd
 From unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd, 35
 Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,
 Which your sincerest care could not prevent;
 Foretold so lately what would come to pass,
 When first this tempter cross'd the gulf from hell.
 I told ye then he should prevail and speed 40
 On his bad errand, man should be seduc'd
 And flatter'd out of all, believing lies
 Against his Maker; no decree of mine
 Concurring to necessitate his fall,
 Or touch with lightest moment of impulse 45
 His free will, to her own inclining left
 In even scale. But fallen he is, and now
 What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass
 On his transgression, death denounc'd that day?
 Which he presumes already vain and void, 50
 Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,
 By some immediate stroke; but soon shall find
 Forbearance no acquittance ere day end.

Justice shall not return as bounty scorn'd.
 But whom send I to judge them? whom but thee, ⁵⁵
 Vicegerent Son? To thee I have transferr'd
 All judgment, whether in heaven, or earth, or hell.
 Easy it may be seen that I intend
 Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee
 Man's friend, his mediator, his design'd ⁶⁰
 Both ransom and redeemer voluntary,
 And destin'd man himself to judge man fallen.

So spake the Father, and, unfolding bright
 Toward the right hand his glory, on the Son
 Blaz'd forth unclouded Deity; he full ⁶⁵
 Resplendent all his Father manifest
 Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild.

Father eternal, thine is to decree,
 Mine both in heaven and earth to do thy will
 Supreme, that thou in me thy Son belov'd ⁷⁰
 May'st ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge
 On earth these thy transgressors, but thou know'st,
 Whoever judg'd, the worst on me must light,
 When time shall be, for so I undertook
 Before thee, and not repenting this obtain ⁷⁵
 Of right, that I may mitigate their doom,
 On me deriv'd; yet I shall temper so
 Justice with mercy, as may illustrate most
 Them fully satisfy'd, and thee appease.
 Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none
 Are to behold the judgment, but the judg'd, ⁸¹

⁵⁸ *may*] 'The second edition, and others, give 'Easy it *might* be seen.'

Those two ; the third best absent is condemn'd,
 Convict by flight, and rebel to all law ;
 Conviction to the serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose ⁸⁵
 Of high collateral glory : him thrones and powers,
 Princedoms and dominations ministrant
 Accompany'd to heaven-gate, from whence
 Eden and all the coast in prospect lay.
 Down he descended straight ; the speed of gods ⁹⁰
 Time counts not, tho' with swiftest minutes wing'd.
 Now was the sun in western cadence low
 From noon, and gentle airs due at their hour
 To fan the earth now wak'd, and usher in
 The ev'ning cool, when he from wrath more cool ⁹⁵
 Came, the mild judge and intercessor both,
 To sentence man : the voice of God they heard
 Now walking in the garden, by soft winds
 Brought to their ears, while day declin'd, they heard,
 And from his presence hid themselves among ¹⁰⁰
 The thickest trees, both man and wife, till God
 Approaching thus to Adam call'd aloud.

Where art thou Adam, wont with joy to meet

⁸⁵ *collateral*] Shakesp. All's Well that Ends Well, act i.
 scene i.

In his bright *radiance* and *collateral* light,
 Must I be comforted, not in his sphere.'

Steevens.

¹⁰⁸ *Where art thou*] See A. Ramssei Poem. Sacr. p. 35.

' ————— vocisque volutat imago,
 Per nemus ingeminans, Adam! Adam! quæ loca, quæ te

My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,
 Not pleas'd, thus entertain'd with solitude, 105
 Where obvious duty erewhile appear'd unsought :
 Or come I less conspicuous, or what change
 Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.

He came, and with him Eve, more loath, though
 first

To offend, discountenanc'd both, and discompos'd.
 Love was not in their looks, either to GOD 111
 Or to each other, but apparent guilt,
 And shame, and perturbation, and despair,
 Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.
 Whence Adam, falt'ring long, thus answer'd brief.

I heard thee in the garden, and of thy voice 115
 Afraid, being naked, hid myself. To whom
 The gracious Judge without revile reply'd.

My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,
 But still rejoic'd ; how is it now become 120
 So dreadful to thee ? that thou art naked, who
 Hath told thee ? hast thou eaten of the tree
 Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat ?

To whom thus Adam sore beset reply'd.
 O heaven ! in evil strait this day I stand 125
 Before my Judge, either to undergo

*Terrarumque tenent sedes ? Commercia nostra
 Congressusque fugis ? Silvis quid te abdis opacis ?*
 126 *I heard*] So in Grotii *Adamus Exsul*, p. 87.

*'Audivi truces,
 Metuende rector ! per nemus sacrum sonos.'
 —————membra concussit pavor,
 Tremuique totus.'*

Myself the total crime, or to accuse
 My other self, the partner of my life ;
 Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,
 I should conceal, and not expose to blame 180
 By my complaint ; but strict necessity
 Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,
 Lest on my head both sin and punishment,
 However insupportable, be all
 Devolv'd : though should I hold my peace, yet thou
 Wouldst easily detect what I conceal. 185
 This woman, whom thou mad'st to be my help,
 And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,
 So fit, so acceptable, so divine,
 That from her hand I could suspect no ill, 190
 And what she did, whatever in itself,
 Her doing seem'd to justify the deed ;
 She gave me of the tree, and I did eat.

To whom the sov'reign Presence thus reply'd.
 Was she thy GOD, that her thou didst obey 195
 Before his voice ? or was she made thy guide,
 Superior, or but equal, that to her
 Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place
 Wherein GOD set thee above her, made of thee,
 And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd 199

187 *This woman*] ' Consortem dederas thalami —

—— per te dotale venenum

Hoc ego concepi. Nam quæ mihi lege jugali
 Juncta fuit, nostro per te dignata cubili,
 Blanditiis teneris nostris amplexibus hærens,
 Ferales epulas, inimicaque fercula suasit.'

A. Rams. P. S., p. 37.

Hers in all real dignity ? adorn'd
 She was indeed, and lovely to attract
 Thy love, not thy subjection ; and her gifts
 Were such as under government well seem'd,
 Unseemly to bear rule, which was thy part 155
 And person, hadst thou known thyself aright.

So having said, he thus to Eve in few :
 Say, woman, what is this which thou hast done ?

To whom sad Eve with shame nigh overwhelm'd,
 Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge 160
 Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd reply'd.
 The serpent me beguil'd, and I did eat.

Which when the Lord God heard, without delay
 To judgment he proceeded on th' accus'd
 Serpent though brute, unable to transfer 165
 The guilt on him who made him instrument
 Of mischief, and polluted from the end
 Of his creation ; justly then accurs'd,
 As vitiated in nature : more to know
 Concern'd not man, since he no further knew, 170
 Nor alter'd his offence : yet God at last
 To Satan first in sin his doom apply'd,

¹⁵⁵ *thy part*] A pure Latinism, the *personæ dramatis*. So Cic. pro Mur. c. 2. 'Has *partes* lenitatis et misericordiæ, quas me Natura ipsa docuit, semper ago libenter: illam vero gravitatis, severitatis *personam* non appetivi.' Richardson.

¹⁶⁷ *in few*] So K. Hen. IV. P. ii. act i. s. 1.

'*In few* ; his death, whose spirit lent a fire.'

and Warner's Alb. Engl. 1808, p. 40.

'*In few* ; the wars are full of woes.' Todd.

Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best :
And on the serpent thus his curse let fall.

Because thou hast done this, thou art accurs'd
Above all cattle, each beast of the field ; 176
Upon thy belly groveling thou shalt go,
And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life.
Between thee and the woman I will put
Enmity, and between thine and her seed ; 180
Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.

So spake this oracle, then verify'd
When Jesus, son of Mary, second Eve,
Saw Satan fall like lightning down from heaven,
Prince of the air ; then rising from his grave 185
Spoil'd principalities and powers, triumph'd
In open'd show, and with ascension bright
Captivity led captive through the air,
The realm itself of Satan long usurp'd,
Whom he shall tread at last under our feet ; 190
Ev'n he who now foretold his fatal bruise ;
And to the woman thus his sentence turn'd.

Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply
By thy conception ; children thou shalt bring
In sorrow forth, and to thy husband's will 195
Thine shall submit ; he over thee shall rule.

On Adam last thus judgment he pronounc'd.
Because thou hast hearken'd to the voice of thy
wife,
And eaten of the tree concerning which
I charg'd thee, saying : Thou shalt not eat thereof,
Curs'd is the ground for thy sake, thou in sorrow

Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy life ;
 Thorns also and thistles it shall bring thee forth
 Unbid, and thou shalt eat th' herb of the field ;
 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, 205
 Till thou return unto the ground ; for thou
 Out of the ground wast taken, know thy birth,
 For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.

So judg'd he man, both Judge and Saviour sent :
 And th' instant stroke of death denounc'd that day
 Remov'd far off ; then pitying how they stood 211
 Before him naked to the air, that now
 Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin
 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume,
 As when he wash'd his servants' feet, so now 215
 As father of his family he clad
 Their nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain,
 Or as the snake with youthful coat repaid ;
 And thought not much to clothe his enemies.
 Nor he their outward only with the skins 220
 Of beasts, but inward nakedness, much more
 Opprobrious, with his robe of righteousness,
 Arraying, cover'd from his Father's sight.
 To him with swift ascent he up return'd,
 Into his blissful bosom reassum'd 225
 In glory as of old ; to him appeas'd
 All, though all-knowing, what had past with man
 Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.

Meanwhile, ere thus was sinn'd and judg'd on
 earth,
 Within the gates of hell sat Sin and Death, 230

In counterview within the gates, that now
 Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame
 Far into Chaos, since the fiend pass'd through,
 Sin opening, who thus now to Death began.

O son, why sit we here, each other viewing ²⁸⁸
 Idly, while Satan our great author thrives
 In other worlds, and happier seat provides
 For us his offspring dear? It cannot be
 But that success attends him; if mishap,
 Ere this he had return'd, with fury driv'n ²⁹⁰
 By his avengers, since no place like this
 Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.
 Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,
 Wings growing, and dominion giv'n me large
 Beyond this deep; whatever draws me on, ²⁹⁵
 Or sympathy, or some connatural force,
 Powerful at greatest distance to unite
 With secret amity things of like kind
 By secretest conveyance. Thou my shade
 Inseparable must with me along; ²⁵⁰
 For Death from Sin no power can separate.
 But lest the difficulty of passing back
 Stay his return perhaps over this gulf
 Impassable, impervious, let us try

²⁸² *belching*] Spens. F. Q. i. xi. 44.

'As burning *Ætna* from his boyling stew

Doth belch out flames.'

Todd.

²⁴⁰ *shade*] 'Shade' used in the same manner in class. authors. Hor. Sat. ii. 8. 22.

— 'quos *Mæcenas* adduxerat umbras.'

Newton.

Advent'rous work, yet to thy power and mine 265
 Not unagreeable, to found a path
 Over this main from hell to that new world
 Where Satan now prevails, a monument
 Of merit high to all th' infernal host,
 Easing their passage hence, for intercourse, 266
 Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.
 Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn
 By this new felt attraction and instinct.

Whom thus the meagre shadow answer'd soon.
 Go whither fate and inclination strong 265
 Lead thee; I shall not lag behind, nor err
 The way, thou leading, such a scent I draw
 Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste
 The savour of death from all things there that live:
 Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest 270
 Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell
 Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock
 Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,

266 *err*] Newton has thus pointed the text:

—— 'I shall not lag behind, nor err

The way, thou leading.'

Well may he call it a remarkable expression; but it should thus be stopt:

—— 'I shall not lag behind, nor err,

The way thou leading.'

This error is retained in Mr. Todd's edition. It is, however, proper to observe, that the punctuation of Milton's own editions agrees with Newton's.

268 *innumerable*] 'Exuberant.' *Bentl. MS.*

Against the day of battle, to a field, 275
 Where armies lie encamp'd, come flying, lur'd
 With scent of living carcasses design'd
 For death, the following day, in bloody fight :
 So scented the grim Feature, and upturn'd
 His nostril wide into the murky air, 280
 Sagacious of his quarry from so far.
 Then both from out hell-gates into the waste
 Wide anarchy of Chaos damp and dark
 Flew diverse, and with power, their power was
 great,
 Hovering upon the waters ; what they met 285
 Solid or slimy, as in raging sea
 Tost up and down, together crowded drove
 From each side shoaling towards the mouth of hell.
 As when two polar winds, blowing adverse
 Upon the Cronian sea, together drive 290
 Mountains of ice, that stop th' imagin'd way
 Beyond Petsora eastward, to the rich
 Cathaian coast. The aggregated soil
 Death with his mace petrific, cold and dry,
 As with a trident smote, and fix'd as firm 295
 As Delos floating once ; the rest his look
 Bound with Gorgonian rigour not to move,
 And with Asphaltic slime, broad as the gate,

²⁸⁴ *mace*] So Marlowe and Nash's Trag. of Dido. 1594.

' Whose memory, like pale *Death's stony mace*,
 Beates forth my senses.' Richardson.

²⁹⁷ *Gorgonian*] Claud. Rufin. i. 279.

' *Rigidâ cum Gorgone Perseus!*' Pearce.

First lighted from his wing, and landed safe
 From out of Chaos, to the outside bare
 Of this round world : with pins of adamant
 And chains they made all fast, too fast they made
 And durable ; and now in little space 380
 The confines met of empyrean heaven
 And of this world, and on the left hand hell
 With long reach interpos'd ; three several ways
 In sight to each of these three places led.
 And now their way to earth they had descry'd, 385
 To Paradise first tending, when, behold
 Satan, in likeness of an angel bright,
 Betwixt the Centaur and the Scorpion steering,
 His zenith, while the sun in Aries rose :
 Disguis'd he came, but those his children dear 390
 Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.
 He, after Eve seduc'd, unminded slunk
 Into the wood fast by, and changing shape
 To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act
 By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded 395
 Upon her husband ; saw their shame that sought
 Vain covertures : but when he saw descend
 The Son of God to judge them, terrify'd
 He fled, not hoping to escape, but shun
 The present, fearing guilty what his wrath 400
 Might suddenly inflict : that past, return'd
 By night, and listening where the hapless pair

From out of Chaos) to the outside bare
 Of this round world.

The part that relates to Satan's path being parenthetical.

Sat in their sad discourse and various plaint,
 Thence gather'd his own doom, which understood
 Not instant, but of future time, with joy ³⁴⁵
 And tidings fraught, to hell he now return'd,
 And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot
 Of this new wondrous pontifice, unhop'd
 Met who to meet him came, his offspring dear.
 Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight ³⁵⁰
 Of that stupendous bridge his joy increas'd.
 Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair
 Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke.

O parent, these are thy magnific deeds,
 Thy trophies, which thou view'st as not thine own;
 Thou art their author and prime architect: ³⁵⁵
 For I no sooner in my heart divin'd,
 My heart, which by a secret harmony
 Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet,
 That thou on earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks
 Now also evidence, but straight I felt, ³⁶¹
 Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt
 That I must after thee with this thy son,
 Such fatal consequence unites us three.
 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds, ³⁶⁵
 Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure
 Detain from following thy illustrious track.
 Thou hast achiev'd our liberty, confin'd

³⁴⁵ *time*] In Milton's own editions, and all others till those of Fenton and Bentley, a full stop was placed after 'Not instant, but of future time.' Newton has inserted only a comma.

³⁶⁴ *consequence*] Congruence. 247. *Benil. MS.*

Within hell-gates till now; thou us impower'd
 To fortify thus far, and overlay 800
 With this portentous bridge the dark abyss.
 Thine now is all this world, thy virtue hath won
 What thy hands builded not, thy wisdom gain'd
 With odds what war hath lost, and fully aveng'd
 Our foil in heav'n; here thou shalt monarch reign,
 There didst not; there let him still victor sway,
 As battle hath adjudg'd, from this new world
 Retiring, by his own doom alienated
 And henceforth monarchy with thee divide
 Of all things, parted by th' empyreal bounds, 805
 His quadrature, from thy orbicular world,
 Or try thee now more dang'rous to his throne.
 Whom thus the prince of darkness answer'd glad.
 Fair daughter, and thou son and grandchild both,
 High proof ye now have giv'n to be the race 810
 Of Satan, for I glory in the name,
 Antagonist of heaven's almighty King,
 Amply have merited of me, of all
 Th' infernal empire, that so near heaven's door,
 Triumphal with triumphal act, have met 815
 Mine with this glorious work, and made one realm
 Hell and this world, one realm, one continent
 Of easy thoroughfare. Therefore, while I

800 *act*] arch. *Bentl. MS.*

801 *one*] '*one* realm, one continent.' This is the genuine reading, but Fenton and Bentley read '*our* realm,' though Bentley places '*one*' in the margin, as his conjecture.

Newton.

Descend through darkness on your road with ease
 To my associate powers, them to acquaint 395
 With these successes, and with them rejoice,
 You two this way, among these numerous orbs
 All yours, right down to Paradise descend;
 There dwell and reign in bliss, thence on the earth
 Dominion exercise and in the air, 400
 Chiefly on man, sole lord of all declar'd;
 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.
 My substitutes I send ye, and create
 Plenipotent on earth, of matchless might
 Issuing from me: on your joint vigor now 405
 My hold of this new kingdom all depends,
 Through sin to death expos'd by my exploit.
 If your joint power prevail, th' affairs of hell
 No detriment need fear; go and be strong. 409
 So saying he dismiss'd them; they with speed
 Their course through thickest constellations held
 Spreading their bane; the blasted stars look'd wan,
 And planets, planet-struck, real eclipse
 Then suffer'd. Th' other way Satan went down
 The causey to hell-gate: on either side 415
 Disparted Chaos over built exclaim'd,
 And with rebounding surge the bars assail'd,

³⁹⁷ *these*] In the first edition, 'those.'

⁴⁰⁸ *prevail*] In the second edition, 'prevails.'

⁴¹² *stars*] P. Fletcher's *Locusts*, p. 58.

—— 'Heaven shuts his eyes,

The starres look pale.'

Todd.

⁴¹⁷ *rebounding*] Virg. *Geo.* ii. 161.

—— 'Lucrinoque addita claustra;

Atque indignatum magnis stridoribus sequor.' *Newcom.*

That scorn'd his indignation. Through the gate,
 Wide open and unguarded, Satan pass'd,
 And all about found desolate; for those 490
 Appointed to sit there had left their charge,
 Flown to the upper world; the rest were all
 Far to the inland retir'd, about the walls
 Of Pandæmonium, city and proud seat
 Of Lucifer, so by allusion call'd, 495
 Of that bright star to Satan paragon'd.
 There kept their watch the legions, while the Grand
 In council sat, solicitous what chance
 Might intercept their emperor sent; so he
 Departing gave command, and they observ'd. 499
 As when the Tartar from his Russian foe
 By Astracan over the snowy plains
 Retires, or Bactrian Sophi from the horns
 Of Turkish crescent leaves all waste beyond
 The realm of Aladule in his retreat 496
 To Tauris or Casbeen: so these, the late
 Heaven-banish'd host, left desert utmost hell
 Many a dark league, reduc'd in careful watch
 Round their metropolis, and now expecting 498
 Each hour their great adventurer from the search
 Of foreign worlds: he thro' the midst unmark'd,
 In show plebeian angel militant
 Of lowest order, pass'd; and from the door
 Of that Plutonian hall invisible
 Ascended his high throne, which, under state 495

496 *paragon'd*] v. Othello, act ii. sc. 1.

'That *paragons* description and wild fame.' Todd

Of richest texture spread, at th' upper end
 Was plac'd in regal lustre. Down a while
 He sat, and round about him saw unseen :
 At last as from a cloud his fulgent head ⁴⁴⁸
 And shape star-bright appear'd, or brighter, clad
 With what permissive glory since his fall
 Was left him, or false glitter. All amaz'd
 At that so sudden blaze the Stygian throng ⁴⁵³
 Bent their aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,
 Their mighty chief return'd : loud was th' acclaim.
 Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting peers,
 Rais'd from their dark divan, and with like joy
 Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand
 Silence, and with these words attention, won. ⁴⁵⁹
 Thrones, dominations, principedoms, virtues, pow-
 For in possession such, not only of right, [ers,
 I call ye and declare ye now, return'd
 Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth
 Triumphant out of this infernal pit

⁴⁴⁸ *unseen*] Tasso, Fairfax, vii. 36.

'Within a tarras sate on high the queen,

And heard, and *saw*, and kept herself *un-seene*.' *Bowle*.

'Yet in such sorts as they might *see unseen*.' Sidney's *Arcadia*, vol. i. p. 234, ed. 1725. *A. Dyce*.

⁴⁴⁹ *fulgent*] v. Val. Flacc. v. 402, 486.

'——— Nebulamque erumpit Jason

Sideris ora ferens.'

Sylvester's Du Bartas, p. 201.

'O miracle! whose *star-bright* beaming head.'

⁴⁵⁰ *star-bright*] v. Hom. Il. vi. ver. 295.

'Thy star-bright eyes.'

v. Ellis's Spec. ii. 381. (Smith's Chloris, 1596.)

Abominable, accurs'd, the house of woe, 465
 And dungeon of our tyrant: now possess,
 As lords, a spacious world, to our native heaven
 Little inferior, by my adventure hard
 With peril great achiev'd. Long were to tell
 What I have done, what suffer'd, with what pain
 Voyag'd th' unreal, vast, unbounded deep 471
 Of horrible confusion, over which
 By Sin and Death a broad way now is pav'd
 To expedite your glorious march: but I
 Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forc'd to ride 475
 Th' untractable abyss, plung'd in the womb
 Of unoriginal Night and Chaos wild,
 That jealous of their secrets fiercely oppos'd
 My journey strange, with clamorous uproar
 Protesting fate supreme; thence how I found 480
 The new created world, which fame in heaven
 Long had foretold, a fabric wonderful
 Of absolute perfection, therein man
 Plac'd in a paradise, by our exile
 Made happy: him by fraud I have seduc'd 485
 From his Creator, and, the more to increase
 Your wonder, with an apple; He thereat
 Offended, worth your laughter! hath giv'n up
 Both his beloved man and all this world
 To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us, 490
 Without our hazard, labour, or alarm,

484 *exile*] Milton always accentuates this word on the *last* syllable; Shakespeare uses it both ways; Chaucer and Spenser on the *last* syllable only. *Todd*.

To range in, and to dwell, and over man
To rule, as over all he should have rul'd.
True is, me also he hath judg'd, or rather
Me not, but the brute serpent, in whose shape
Man I deceiv'd : that which to me belongs 496
Is enmity, which he will put between
Me and mankind ; I am to bruise his heel ;
His seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head.
A world who would not purchase with a bruise,
Or much more grievous pain ? Ye have th' account
Of my performance : what remains, ye gods,
But up and enter now into full bliss ?

So having said, a while he stood, expecting
Their universal shout and high applause 505
To fill his ear ; when contrary he hears
On all sides, from innumerable tongues,
A dismal universal hiss, the sound
Of public scorn ; he wonder'd, but not long
Had leisure, wond'ring at himself now more : 510
His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,
His arms clung to his ribs, his legs entwining
Each other, till supplanted down he fell
A monstrous serpent on his belly prone,
Reluctant, but in vain ; a greater power 515
Now rul'd him, punish'd in the shape he sinn'd,
According to his doom. He would have spoke,
But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue
To forked tongue ; for now were all transform'd
Alike, to serpents all as accessories 520
To his bold riot : dreadful was the din

Of hissing through the hall, thick swarming now
 With complicated monsters head and tail,
 Scorpion, and asp, and amphibæna dire,
 Cerastes horn'd, hydrus, and ellops drear, 525
 And dipsas ; not so thick swarm'd once the soil
 Bedropp'd with blood of Gorgon, or the isle
 Ophiusa ; but still greatest he the midst,
 Now dragon, grown larger than whom the sun
 Ingender'd in the Pythian vale on slime, 530
 Huge Python, and his power no less he seem'd
 Above the rest still to retain. They all
 Him follow'd issuing forth to th' open field,
 Where all yet left of that revolted rout
 Heaven-fall'n in station stood or just array, 535
 Sublime with expectation when to see
 In triumph issuing forth their glorious chief :
 They saw, but other sight instead, a crowd
 Of ugly serpents ; horror on them fell,
 And horrid sympathy ; for what they saw, 540
 They felt themselves now changing : down their
 arms,
 Down fell both spear and shield, down they as fast,
 And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form
 Catch'd by contagion, like in punishment,
 As in their crime. Thus was th' applause they meant
 Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame,

⁵²⁴ *asp*] v. Hagthorpe's Divine Meditations, p. 18.

'The aspe, and two-headed amphibæna,
 The horned Cerastes, Alexandrian skinke,
 Dipsas and Drymas.'

Cast on themselves from their own mouths. There
stood

A grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,
His will who reigns above, to aggravate
Their penance, laden with fair fruit, like that ⁵⁵⁰
Which grew in paradise, the bait of Eve
Us'd by the tempter : on that prospect strange
Their earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining
For one forbidden tree a multitude
Now ris'n, to work them further woe or shame : ⁵⁵⁵
Yet parch'd with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,
Though to delude them sent, could not abstain,
But on they roll'd in heaps, and up the trees
Climbing sat thicker than the snaky locks
That curl'd Megæra : greedily they pluck'd ⁵⁶⁰
The fruitage fair to sight, like that which grew
Near that bituminous lake where Sodom flam'd ;
This more delusive not the touch, but taste
Deceiv'd ; they, fondly thinking to allay
Their appetite with gust, instead of fruit ⁵⁶⁵

⁵⁵⁰ *fair*] 'Their penance laden with *fair* fruit, like that.'
So the verse stood in the first ed.; in the second '*fair*' was
omitted; other editions read,

'Their penance, laden with fruit, like *to* that.'

Tonson's ed. of 1711, and Tickell's of 1720, read '*patience*'
for '*penance*,' which Fenton followed. The true reading is
restored in ed. 1746 of Tonson.

⁵⁶⁵ *fruit*] See Solini Polyhist. c. xxxviii. 'Pomum
gignitur quod habeat speciem licet maturitatis, mandi tamen
non potest. Nam fuliginem intrinsecus favillaceam ambitio
tantum extimæ cutis cohibet: quæ, vel levi tactu pressa,
fumum exhalat, et fatiscit in vagum pulverem.'

Chew'd bitter ashes, which th' offended taste
 With spattering noise rejected: oft they assay'd,
 Hunger and thirst constraining; drugg'd as oft,
 With hatefullest disrelish writh'd their jaws
 With soot and cinders fill'd; so oft they fell ⁵⁷⁰
 Into the same illusion, not as man [plagu'd
 Whom they triumph'd once laps'd. Thus were they
 And worn with famine long, and ceaseless hiss,
 Till their lost shape, permitted, they resum'd,
 Yearly enjoin'd, some say, to undergo ⁵⁷⁵
 This annual humbling certain number'd days,
 To dash their pride and joy for man seduc'd.
 However, some tradition they dispers'd
 Among the heathen of their purchase got,
 And fabled how the serpent, whom they call'd ⁵⁸⁰
 Ophion with Eurynome, the wide
 Encroaching Eve perhaps, had first the rule
 Of high Olympus, thence by Saturn driv'n
 And Ops, ere yet Dictæan Jove was born.
 Meanwhile in paradise the hellish pair ⁵⁸⁵
 Too soon arriv'd; Sin there in power before,
 Once actual, now in body, and to dwell
 Habitual habitant; behind her Death

⁵⁷² *laps'd*] The meaning of this passage seems to be—The serpents *often fell* into the mistake of eating the fruit that was fair to the eye, but bitter to the taste; whereas man, over whom they triumphed, *only once lapsed*.

⁵⁷⁸ *long*] Milton's edition places a comma after famine, but Newton has improved the line by proposing it should be thus read,

And worn with famine long, and ceaseless hiss.

Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet
On his pale horse; to whom Sin thus began. 500

Second of Satan sprung, all conquering Death,
What think'st thou of our empire now? Tho' earn'd
With travail difficult, not better far
Than still at hell's dark threshold to have sate watch,
Unnam'd, undreaded, and thyself half starv'd? 505

Whom thus the sin-born monster answer'd soon.
To me, who with eternal famine pine,
Alike is hell, or paradise, or heaven,
There best, where most with ravin I may meet;
Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems
To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-bound corps.

To whom the incestuous mother thus reply'd.
Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers
Feed first; on each beast next, and fish, and fowl,
No homely morsels, and whatever thing 505
The scythe of Time mows down, devour unspar'd;
Till I in man residing through the race,
His thoughts, his looks, words, actions, all infect;
And season him thy last and sweetest prey.

This said, they both betook them several ways,
Both to destroy, or unimmortal make 511
All kinds, and for destruction to mature
Sooner or later; which th' Almighty seeing,

⁵¹⁰ *betook*] so Stat. Theb. xi. 118, of the Furies.

Talia partitæ diversum abiere sorores.

*Illas ut summo vidit pater altus Olympo
Incestare diem, trepidumque Hyperionis orbem
Suffundi maculis, torvo sic inchoat ore.*

From his transcendent seat the saints among,
To those bright orders utter'd thus his voice. ⁶¹⁵

See with what heat these dogs of hell advance
To waste and havoc yonder world, which I
So fair and good created, and had still
Kept in that state, had not the folly of man
Let in these wasteful furies, who impute ⁶²⁰
Folly to me; so doth the prince of hell
And his adherents, that with so much ease
I suffer them to enter and possess
A place so heavenly, and conniving seem
To gratify my scornful enemies, ⁶²⁵
That laugh, as if, transported with some fit
Of passion, I to them had quitted all,
At random yielded up to their misrule;
And know not that I call'd and drew them thither
My hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth, ⁶³⁰
Which man's polluting sin with taint hath shed
On what was pure! till cramm'd and gorg'd, nigh
With suck'd and glutted offal, at one sling [burst
Of thy victorious arm, well-pleasing Son, ⁶³⁴
Both Sin, and Death, and yawning Grave, at last
Through Chaos hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of hell
For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.

⁶¹⁶ *dogs*] See Ap. Rhod. Arg. iv. 1665.

μόλπε δὲ Κῆρας

Θυμοβόρους, 'Αἰδῶο θοῶς κύνες, αἱ περὶ πᾶσαν

'Héra dnenúousai ἐπὶ ζωοῖσιν ἔχονται.

Todd.

'Stygiosque canes.' Luc. Phars. vi. 733. *A. Dyce.*

⁶³¹ *hath shed*] Fenton reads after Tickell, 'had shed.'

Then heaven and earth renew'd shall be made pure
 To sanctity that shall receive no stain :
 Till then the curse pronounc'd on both precedes.

He ended, and the heavenly audience loud ⁶⁴¹
 Sung Hallelujah, as the sound of seas,
 Through multitude that sung : Just are Thy ways,
 Righteous are Thy decrees on all Thy works ;
 Who can extenuate Thee ? Next, to the Son, ⁶⁴⁵
 Destin'd restorer of mankind, by whom
 New heaven and earth shall to the ages rise,
 Or down from heaven descend. Such was their song,
 While the Creator calling forth by name
 His mighty angels gave them several charge, ⁶⁵⁰
 As sorted best with present things. The sun
 Had first his precept so to move, so shine,
 As might affect the earth with cold and heat
 Scarce tolerable, and from the north to call
 Decrepit winter, from the south to bring ⁶⁵⁵
 Solstitial summer's heat. To the blanc moon
 Her office they prescrib'd, to th' other five
 Their planetary motions and aspects
 In Sextile, Square, and Trine, and Opposite,

⁶⁵⁵ *Decrepit*] This expression occurs in Beaumont and Fletcher's 'Wife for a Month.'

'*Decrepit Winter* hang upon my shoulders.' *Newton*.

⁶⁵⁶ *blanc moon*] Virg. *Æn.* vii. 8. 'Candida' luna. Canzon. di Giustiniano, 1620, p. 12.

'*E bianca Cintia* in negro ciel pare.' *Todd*.

⁶⁵⁹ *Sextile*] See Lisle's *Du Bartas*, p. 156.

'In tryangl', in quadrangle, or in *sextile* agglance.'
 and Wishart's *Emanuel*, p. 22, 52.

Of noxious efficacy, and when to join 660
 In synod unbenign; and taught the fix'd
 Their influence malignant when to shower,
 Which of them rising with the sun, or falling,
 Should prove tempestuous. To the winds they set
 Their corners, when with bluster to confound 665
 Sea, air, and shore; the thunder when to roll
 With terror through the dark æreal hall.
 Some say, he bid his angels turn askance
 The poles of earth twice ten degrees and more
 From the sun's axle; they with labour push'd 670
 Oblique the centric globe: some say, the sun
 Was bid turn reins from th' equinoctial road
 Like distant breadth to Taurus with the seven
 Atlantic Sisters, and the Spartan Twins,
 Up to the Tropic Crab; thence down amain 675
 By Leo, and the Virgin, and the Scales,
 As deep as Capricorn, to bring in change
 Of seasons to each clime; else had the spring
 Perpetual smil'd on earth with vernant flowers,
 Equal in days and nights, except to those 680
 Beyond the polar circles; to them day
 Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun
 To recompense his distance in their sight
 Had rounded still th' horizon, and not known
 Or east or west, which had forbid the snow 685
 From cold Estotiland, and south as far
 Beneath Magellan. At that tasted fruit

678 40] Bentley reads 'through Taurus;' an alteration which
 Pope and Newton have approved.

The sun, as from Thyestean banquet, turn'd
 His course intended ; else how had the world
 Inhabited, though sinless, more than now 690
 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat ? [duc'd
 These changes in the heavens, though slow, pro-
 Like change on sea and land, sidereal blast,
 Vapour, and mist, and exhalation hot,
 Corrupt and pestilent. Now from the north 695
 Of Norumbega and the Samoed shore,
 Bursting their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice,
 And snow, and hail, and stormy gust, and flaw,
 Boreas, and Cæcias, and Argestes loud, 699
 And Thrascias rend the woods, and seas upturn ;
 With adverse blast upturns them from the south
 Notus, and Afer black with thund'rous clouds
 From Serralliona ; thwart of these as fierce
 Forth rush the Levant and the Ponent winds,
 Euris and Zephyr with their lateral noise, 705
 Sirocco and Libecchio. Thus began
 Outrage from lifeless things ; but Discord first,
 Daughter of Sin, among th' irrational
 Death introduc'd through fierce antipathy : 709
 Beast now with beast gan war, and fowl with fowl,

697 *arm'd*] Claud. de Rap. Pros. i. 69.

'Ceu turbine rauco

Cum gravis *armatur Boreas*, glacieque nivali.'

Richardson.

698 *gust*] Shakesp. Venus and Adonis.

'Like a red morn that ever yet betoken'd

Gust, and foul *flaws* to herdsmen, and to herds.'

Newton.

And fish with fish ; to graze the herb all leaving
 Devour'd each other ; nor stood much in awe
 Of man, but fled him, or with count'nance grim
 Glar'd on him passing. These were from without
 The growing miseries, which Adam saw 715
 Already in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,
 To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within,
 And, in a troubled sea of passion tost,
 Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint.

O miserable of happy ! is this the end 720
 Of this new glorious world, and me so late
 The glory of that glory, who now become
 Accurs'd of blessed ? Hide me from the face
 Of God, whom to behold was then my height
 Of happiness : yet well, if here would end 725
 The misery, I deserv'd it, and would bear
 My own deservings ; but this will not serve ;
 All that I eat, or drink, or shall beget,
 Is propagated curse. O voice once heard
 Delightfully, 'Increase and multiply,' 730
 Now death to hear ! for what can I increase
 Or multiply, but curses on my head ?
 Who of all ages to succeed, but feeling
 The evil on him brought by me, will curse
 My head ? Ill fare our ancestor impure, 735
 For this we may thank Adam ; but his thanks
 Shall be the execration ; so besides
 Mine own that bide upon me, all from me
 Shall with a fierce reflux on me redound,
 On me, as on their natural centre, light 740

Heavy, though in their place. O fleeting joys
 Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes !
 Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay,
 To mould me man ? Did I solicit thee
 From darkness to promote me, or here place 745
 In this delicious garden ? As my will
 Concurr'd not to my being, it were but right
 And equal to reduce me to my dust,
 Desirous to resign, and render back
 All I receiv'd, unable to perform 750
 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold
 The good I sought not. To the loss of that,
 Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added
 The sense of endless woes ? Inexplicable
 Thy justice seems ; yet, to say truth, too late 755
 I thus contest : then should have been refus'd
 Those terms, whatever, when they were propos'd.
 Thou didst accept them ; wilt thou enjoy the good,
 Then cavil the conditions ? and though God
 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son 760
 Prove disobedient, and reprov'd retort,
 Wherefore didst thou beget me ? I sought it not :
 Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee
 That proud excuse ? yet him not thy election,
 But natural necessity begot. 765
 God made thee of choice his own, and of his own
 To serve him ; thy reward was of his grace,
 Thy punishment then justly is at his will.

⁷⁶⁵ *God made thee of choice*] 'Thee God made freely.'
Berol. MS.

Be it so, for I submit, his doom is fair,
 That dust I am, and shall to dust return : 770
 O welcome hour whenever ! why delays
 His hand to execute what his decree
 Fix'd on this day ? why do I overlive ?
 Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out
 To deathless pain ? how gladly would I meet 775
 Mortality my sentence, and be earth
 Insensible ! how glad would lay me down
 As in my mother's lap ! there I should rest
 And sleep secure ; his dreadful voice no more
 Would thunder in my ears ; no fear of worse 780
 To me and to my offspring would torment me
 With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt
 Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die ;
 Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of man
 Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish 785

776 *meet*] So in the *Adamus Exsul* of Grotius, p. 60.

' — Tellus, concavos aperi sinus !

Cur non dehiscis ? aut in Acheruntis plagam
 Te, nosque mergis ? Gemina compages soli
 Pateat revulsa ! Quaque stamus noxii,
 Opaca tellus corpora absorbat duo ! '

778 *mother's lap*] 'In ipso gremio terræ matris.' Apulei
Apolog. vol. i. p. 540, ed. Delph. See *Liv. Hist.* i. 56.
Ovid. Fast. ii. 718, *Metam.* iii. 125,

'Sanguineam trepido plangebatur pectore matrem.'

788 *all*] *Æsch. Prom. Vinc.* 1053.

πάντως ἐμὲ γ' οὐ θανάτωσιν.

and *Hor. Od.* iii. xxx. 6. 'Non omnis moriar.'

Newton. Todd.

With this corporeal clod ; then in the grave,
 Or in some other dismal place, who knows
 But I shall die a living death ? O thought
 Horrid, if true ! yet why ? it was but breath
 Of life that sinn'd ; what dies but what had life 790
 And sin ? the body properly hath neither.
 All of me then shall die ; let this appease
 The doubt, since human reach no further knows.
 For though the Lord of all be infinite,
 Is his wrath also ? be it, man is not so, 795
 But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise
 Wrath without end on man whom death must end ?
 Can he make deathless death ? that were to make
 Strange contradiction, which to God himself
 Impossible is held, as argument 800
 Of weakness, not of power. Will he draw out,
 For anger's sake, finite to infinite
 In punish'd man, to satisfy his rigour
 Satisfy'd never ? that were to extend
 His sentence beyond dust and nature's law, 805
 By which all causes else according still
 To the reception of their matter act,
 Not to th' extent of their own sphere. But say,
 That death be not one stroke, as I suppos'd,
 Bereaving sense, but endless misery 810
 From this day onward, which I feel begun
 Both in me, and without me, and so last
 To perpetuity. Ay me ! that fear
 Comes thund'ring back with dreadful revolution
 On my defenceless head ; both death and I 815

Am found eternal, and incorporate both ;
 Nor I on my part single, in me all
 Posterity stands curs'd. Fair patrimony
 That I must leave ye, sons ; O were I able
 To waste it all myself, and leave ye none ! 800
 So disinherited, how would ye bless
 Me, now your curse ! Ah ! why should all mankind
 For one man's fault thus guiltless be condemn'd,
 If guiltless ? But from me what can proceed,
 But all corrupt, both mind and will deprav'd, 805
 Not to do only, but to will the same
 With me ? how can they then acquitted stand
 In sight of God ? Him after all disputes
 Forc'd I absolve : all my evasions vain
 And reasonings, tho' through mazes, lead me still
 But to my own conviction : first and last
 On me, me only, as the source and spring
 Of all corruption, all the blame lights due ;
 So might the wrath ! Fond wish ! couldst thou
 support
 That burden heavier than the earth to bear, 810
 Than all the world much heavier, though divided
 With that bad woman ? Thus what thou desir'st,
 And what thou fear'st, alike destroys all hope
 Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable
 Beyond all past example and future, 815

816 *Am*] ["Are" was] Bentley's conjecture, [often] received into the text; all the editions previously read 'Am.'

810 *future*] v. Fairfax's Tasso, cxvii. 88.

'But not by art, or skill, of things future
 Can the plaine troath revealed be, and told.' *Newton*.

To Satan only like both crime and doom.
 O Conscience, into what abyss of fears
 And horrors hast thou driv'n me, out of which
 I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd !
 Thus Adam to himself lamented loud ⁸⁴⁸
 Through the still night, not now, as ere man fell,
 Wholesome, and cool, and mild, but with black air
 Accompany'd, with damps and dreadful gloom,
 Which to his evil conscience represented
 All things with double terror. On the ground ⁸⁵⁰
 Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground, and oft
 Curs'd his creation, death as oft accus'd
 Of tardy execution, since denounc'd
 The day of his offence. Why comes not death.
 Said he, with one thrice acceptable stroke ⁸⁵⁵
 To end me ? Shall truth fail to keep her word,
 Justice divine not hasten to be just ?
 But death comes not at call, justice divine
 Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.
 O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bowers,
 With other echo late I taught your shades ⁸⁶¹

⁸⁵¹ *cold ground*] v. Sp. F. Queen. iii. iv. 53.

'The *cold earth* was his couch.'

and vi. iv. 40.

'On the *cold ground*, maugre, himself he threw.' *Todd*.

⁸⁵⁴ *death*] So Sophocl. Philoctetes. 797.

ὦ θάνατε, θάνατε, πῶς αἶν καλούμενος

ὁὕτω κατ' ἡμᾶρ, οὐ δύνα μολεῖν ποτε. *Newton*.

⁸⁶⁰ *hillocks*] Fenton proposes to read 'hills, rocks.'

⁸⁶¹ *shades*] 'Caves.' *Bentl. MS.* iv. 257.

To answer, and resound far other song.
 Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld,
 Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,
 Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd : 865
 But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.

Out of my sight, thou serpent! that name best
 Befits thee with him leagu'd, thyself as false
 And hateful; nothing wants, but that thy shape,
 Like his, and colour serpentine may show 870
 Thy inward fraud, to warn all creatures from thee
 Henceforth; lest that too heavenly form, pre-
 tended

To hellish falsehood, snare them. But for thee
 I had persisted happy, had not thy pride
 And wand'ring vanity, when least was safe, 875
 Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd
 Not to be trusted, longing to be seen
 Though by the devil himself, him overweening
 To over-reach; but with the serpent meeting,
 Fool'd and beguil'd, by him thou, I by thee, 880
 To trust thee from my side, imagin'd wise,
 Constant, mature, proof against all assaults,
 And understood not all was but a show
 Rather than solid virtue, all but a rib
 Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears, 885
 More to the part sinister from me drawn.
 Well if thrown out, as supernumerary

⁸⁷² *pretended*] As in the Latin Tongue, signifies 'placed before.' Virg. Georg. i. 270, 'Segeti *prætendere* sepem,' and Æn. vi. 60. *Pearce*.

To my just number found. Oh! why did God,
 Creator wise, that peopled highest heaven
 With spirits masculine, create at last 800
 This novelty on earth, this fair defect
 Of nature, and not fill the world at once
 With men as angels without feminine,
 Or find some other way to generate
 Mankind? This mischief had not then befall'n, 805
 And more that shall befall, innumerable
 Disturbances on earth through female snares,
 And straight conjunction with this sex: for either
 He never shall find out fit mate, but such
 As some misfortune brings him, or mistake, 810
 Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain
 Through her perverseness; but shall see her
 gain'd

By a far worse; or if she love, withheld
 By parents, or his happiest choice too late
 Shall meet, already link'd and wedlock-bound 815
 To a fell adversary, his hate or shame;
 Which infinite calamity shall cause
 To human life, and household peace confound.

He added not, and from her turn'd; but Eve
 Not so repuls'd, with tears that ceas'd not flowing,
 And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet 811
 Fell humble, and, embracing them, besought
 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

⁸⁰⁸ *God*] Compare Euripidis Hippolytus, v. 616; and Medea. v. 673; and Ariosto Or. Fur. c. xxvii. st. 120.

Newton.

Forsake me not thus, Adam ! witness heaven
 What love sincere and reverence in my heart ⁹¹⁴
 I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,
 Unhappily deceiv'd ; thy suppliant
 I beg, and clasp thy knees ; bereave me not
 Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
 Thy counsel in this uttermost distress, ⁹²⁰
 My only strength and stay : forlorn of thee,
 Whither shall I betake me, where subsist ?
 While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,
 Between us two let there be peace, both joining,
 As join'd in injuries, one enmity ⁹²⁵
 Against a foe by doom express assign'd us,
 That cruel serpent. On me exercise not
 Thy hatred for this misery befallen,
 On me already lost, me than thyself

⁹¹⁴ *Forsake me not*] So in the *Adamus Exsul* of Grotius.
 p. 64, Eve says,

'Per sancta thalami sacra, per jus nominis
 Quodcunque nostri, sive me natam vocas,
 Ex te creatam, sive communi Patre
 Ortam, sororem, sive potius conjugem,
 Ne me relinquant. Nunc tuo auxilio est opus,
 Cum versa sors est. Unicum lapsæ mihi
 Firmamen, unam spem gravi afflictæ malo.'

⁹²¹ *forlorn*] *Ov. Met. i.* 358.

'Quid tibi, si sine me fatis erepta fuisses,
 Nunc animi, miseranda, foret ? quo sola timorem
 Ferre modo posses ? quo consolante doleres ?
 Namque ego, crede mihi, si te modo pontus haberet,
 Te sequeretur, conjux.'

⁹²⁵ *one enmity*] Bentley reads '*in* enmity,' which reading
 Newton thinks not improbable.

More miserable ; both have sinn'd, but thou 980
 Against God only ; I against God and thee,
 And to the place of judgment will return,
 There with my cries importune heaven, that all
 The sentence, from thy head remov'd, may light
 On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe, 985
 Me, me only just object of his ire.

She ended weeping, and her lowly plight,
 Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault
 Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in Adam wrought
 Commiseration ; soon his heart relented 990
 Towards her, his life so late and sole delight,
 Now at his feet submissive in distress,
 Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,
 His counsel, whom she had displeas'd, his aid ;
 As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost, 995
 And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

Unwary and too desirous as before,
 So now of what thou know'st not, who desir'st
 The punishment all on thyself ; alas,
 Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain 999
 His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part,
 And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If prayers
 Could alter high decrees, I to that place
 Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,
 That on my head all might be visited, 999
 Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiv'n,
 To me committed, and by me expos'd.

981 *I against* S. Grotii Adamus Exsul. p. 65

' ——— Ego duplex feci nefas,
 Cum fallor et cum fallo.'

But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame
 Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere, but strive
 In offices of love how we may lighten 980
 Each other's burden in our share of woe ;
 Since this day's death denounc'd, if aught I see,
 Will prove no sudden, but a slow-pac'd evil,
 A long day's dying to augment our pain,
 And to our seed, O hapless seed ! deriv'd. 985

To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, reply'd.
 Adam, by sad experiment I know
 How little weight my words with thee can find,
 Found so erroneous ; thence by just event
 Found so unfortunate ; nevertheless, 990
 Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place
 Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain
 Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart
 Living or dying, from thee I will not hide
 What thoughts in my unquiet breast are ris'n, 995
 Tending to some relief of our extremes,
 Or end, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,
 As in our evils, and of easier choice.
 If care of our descent perplex us most,
 Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd 1000
 By Death at last, and miserable it is
 To be to others cause of misery,
 Our own begotten, and of our loins to bring
 Into this cursed world a woful race,
 That after wretched life must be at last 1005

981 *it is* | Todd remarks, that a parenthesis commences at the words 'and miserable it is,' and comes down to 'so foul a monster,' ver. 986.

Food for so foul a monster, in thy power
 It lies, yet ere conception to prevent
 The race unblest, to being yet unbegot.
 Childless thou art, childless remain : so Death
 Shall be deceiv'd his glut, and with us two 980
 Be forc'd to satisfy his rav'nous maw.
 But if thou judge it hard and difficult,
 Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain
 From love's due rights, nuptial embraces sweet,
 And with desire to languish without hope, 985
 Before the present object languishing
 With like desire, which would be misery,
 And torment less than none of what we dread,
 Then both ourselves and seed at once to free
 From what we fear for both, let us make short, 1000
 Let us seek Death, or, he not found, supply
 With our own hands his office on ourselves :

989 In Milton's own editions, and in others, this and the following line are thus printed

Childless thou art, childless remain,
 So death shall be deceived his glut, and with us two, &c.

This error went through both Milton's editions; and it was one that when the poem was read to him, his *ear alone* could not detect; but the continuance of it does not speak much in favour of the knowledge or attention of those who *read to him*.

1001 *supply*] So in the *Adamus Exsul* of Grotius, p. 61.

‘——— Quid mihi exsequias nego?’

Quid pereo vivus? quid meos manes moror?

——— Tu, manus! potius veni

Ministra pœnæ, quæ fuisti criminum.’

Why stand we longer shivering under fears,
 That show no end but death, and have the power,
 Of many ways to die the shortest choosing, 1005
 Destruction with destruction to destroy?

She ended here, or vehement despair
 Broke off the rest; so much of death her thoughts
 Had entertain'd, as dy'd her cheeks with pale.
 But Adam, with such counsel nothing sway'd, 1010
 To better hopes his more attentive mind
 Labouring had rais'd, and thus to Eve reply'd.

Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems
 To argue in thee something more sublime
 And excellent than what thy mind contemns; 1015
 But self-destruction therefore sought refutes
 That excellence thought in thee, and implies,
 Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret
 For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd.
 Or if thou covet death, as utmost end 1020
 Of misery, so thinking to evade
 The penalty pronounc'd, doubt not but God
 Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire than so
 To be forestall'd: much more I fear lest death
 So snatch'd will not exempt us from the pain 1025
 We are by doom to pay: rather such acts
 Of contumacy will provoke the Highest
 To make death in us live: then let us seek

1009 *pale*] Virg. *Æn.* iv. 499.

'Hæc effata silet; pallor simul occupat ora.' *Jordan.*

Compare *Æn.* iv. 644. Lucan, vii. 130. *Hume.*

Some safer resolution, which methinks
I have in view, calling to mind with heed 1030
Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise
The serpent's head : piteous amends, unless
Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe
Satan, who in the serpent hath contriv'd
Against us this deceit. To crush his head 1035
Would be revenge indeed ; which will be lost
By death brought on our selves, or childless days
Resolv'd, as thou proposest ; so our foe
Shall scape his punishment ordain'd, and we
Instead shall double ours upon our heads. 1040
No more be mention'd then of violence
Against our selves, and wilful barrenness,
That cuts us off from hope, and savours only
Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,
Reluctance against God and his just yoke 1045
Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild
And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd
Without wrath or reviling ; we expected
Immediate dissolution, which we thought
Was meant by death that day, when, lo ! to thee
Pains only in child-bearing were foretold, 1051
And bringing forth ; soon recompens'd with joy,
Fruit of thy womb : on me the curse aslope
Glanc'd on the ground ; with labour I must earn
My bread ; what harm ? idleness had been worse ;
My labour will sustain me ; and lest cold 1055
Or heat should injure us, his timely care
Hath unbesought provided, and his hands

Cloth'd us unworthy, pitying while he judg'd.
 How much more, if we pray him, will his ear ¹⁰⁶⁰
 Be open, and his heart to pity incline,
 And teach us further by what means to shun
 Th' inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow,
 Which now the sky with various face begins
 To show us in this mountain, while the winds ¹⁰⁶⁵
 Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks
 Of these fair spreading trees, which bids us seek
 Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish
 Our limbs benumb'd, ere this diurnal star
 Leave cold the night, how we his gather'd beams
 Reflected may with matter sere foment, ¹⁰⁷¹
 Or by collision of two bodies grind
 The air attrite to fire, as late the clouds
 Justling or push'd with winds rude in their shock
 Tine the slant lightning, whose thwart flame driv'n
 Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine, [down
 And sends a comfortable heat from far,
 Which might supply the sun. Such fire to use,
 And what may else be remedy or cure
 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought,
 He will instruct us praying, and of grace ¹⁰⁸¹

¹⁰⁷¹ *foment*] Virg. *Æn.* i. 175.

'Suscepitque ignem foliis, atque arida circum
 Nutrimenta dedit, rapuitque in *fomite* flammam.'

Hume.

¹⁰⁷⁸ *fire*] 'Be *tired* with holy fire.' Quarles' *Emblems*,
 p. 293.

¹⁰⁷⁶ *or pine*] Fenton and Bentley read 'and pine.'

Beseeching him, so as we need not fear
 To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd
 By him with many comforts, till we end
 In dust, our final rest and native home. 1080

What better can we do, than, to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall
 Before him reverent, and there confess
 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears
 Watering the ground, and with our sighs the air
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow unfeign'd and humiliation meek?
 Undoubtedly he will relent and turn
 From his displeasure, in whose look serene,
 When angry most he seem'd and most severe, 1088
 What else but favour, grace, and mercy shone?

So spake our father penitent, nor Eve
 Felt less remorse: they forthwith, to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd them, prostrate fell
 Before him reverent, and both confess'd 1100
 Humbly their faults, and pardon begg'd, with tears
 Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow unfeign'd and humiliation meek.

¹⁰⁹¹ *Frequenting*] Tempeſting. *Bentl. MS.* so in line 1108.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK XI.

THE ARGUMENT.

THE Son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them: God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in paradise; sends Michael with a band of cherubim to dispossess them; but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michael's coming down. Adam shows to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michael's approach; goes out to meet him: the angel denounces their departure. Eve's lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: the angel leads him up to a high hill; sets before him in vision what shall happen till the flood.

Thus they in lowliest plight repentant stood
 Praying, for from the mercy-seat above
 Preventive grace descending had remov'd
 The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh
 Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breath'd
 Unutterable, which the spirit of prayer
 Inspir'd, and wing'd for heaven with speedier flight
 Than loudest oratory: yet their port
 Not of mean suitors, nor important less
 Seem'd their petition, than when th' ancient pair¹¹
 In fables old, less ancient yet than these,

¹¹ *In fables old*] Fables told this. *Bentl. MS.*

Deucalion and chaste Pyrrha, to restore
 The race of mankind drown'd, before the shrine
 Of Themis stood devout. To heav'n their prayers
 Flew up, nor miss'd the way, by envious winds ¹⁵
 Blown vagabond or frustrate : in they pass'd
 Dimensionless through heav'nly doors ; then clad
 With incense, where the golden altar fum'd,
 By their great Intercessor, came in sight
 Before the Father's throne : them the glad Son ²⁰
 Presenting, thus to intercede began.

See, Father, what first fruits on earth are sprung
 From thy implanted grace in man, these sighs
 And prayers, which, in this golden censer mix'd
 With incense, I thy priest before thee bring ; ²⁵
 Fruits of more pleasing savour from thy seed
 Sown with contrition in his heart, than those
 Which his own hand manuring all the trees
 Of paradise could have produc'd, ere fall'n
 From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear ³⁰
 To supplication, hear his sighs though mute ;
 Unskilful with what words to pray, let me
 Interpret for him, me his advocate
 And propitiation ; all his works on me
 Good or not good ingraft, my merit those ³⁵
 Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.
 Accept me, and in me from these receive
 The smell of peace toward mankind, let him live

¹⁵ *envious*] Ov. Met. x. 642.

Detulit *aura* preces ad me non *invida* blandas.

Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days
 Number'd, though sad, till death, his doom (which I
 To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse),
 To better life shall yield him, where with me
 All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss :
 Made one with me as I with thee am one.

To whom the Father, without cloud, serene. 45
 All thy request for man, accepted Son,
 Obtain, all thy request was my decree :
 But longer in that paradise to dwell
 The law I gave to nature him forbids :
 Those pure immortal elements, that know 50
 No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,
 Eject him tainted now, and purge him off
 As a distemper, gross to air as gross,
 And mortal food, as may dispose him best
 For dissolution wrought by sin, that first 55
 Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt
 Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts
 Created him endow'd, with happiness
 And immortality : that fondly lost,
 This other serv'd but to eternize woe, 60
 Till I provided death ; so death becomes
 His final remedy, and after life
 Try'd in sharp tribulation, and refin'd
 By faith and faithful works, to second life,
 Wak'd in the renovation of the just, 65
 Resigns him up with heaven and earth renew'd.
 But let us call to synod all the blest [hide
 Thro' heaven's wide bounds ; from them I will not

My judgments, how with mankind I proceed,
As how with peccant angels late they saw ; 70
And in their state, tho' firm, stood more confirm'd.

He ended, and the Son gave signal high
To the bright minister that watch'd ; he blew
His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps
When God descended, and perhaps once more 75
To sound at general doom. Th' angelic blast
Fill'd all the regions : from their blissful bow'rs
Of amarantin shade, fountain or spring,
By the waters of life, where'er they sat
In fellowships of joy, the sons of light 80
Hasted, resorting to the summons high,
And took their seats ; till from his throne supreme
Th' Almighty thus pronounc'd his sov'reign will.

O Sons, like one of us man is become
To know both good and evil, since his taste 85
Of that defended fruit ; but let him boast
His knowledge of good lost, and evil got ;
Happier, had it suffic'd him to have known
Good by it self, and evil not at all.
He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite, 90
My motions in him ; longer than they move,
His heart I know how variable and vain,
Self-left. Lest therefore his now bolder hand
Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,
And live for ever, dream at least to live 95
For ever, to remove him I decree,
And send him from the garden forth to till
The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.

Michael, this my behest have thou in charge,
 Take to thee from among the cherubim 100
 Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the fiend,
 Or in behalf of man, or to invade
 Vacant possession, some new trouble raise :
 Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God
 Without remorse drive out the sinful pair, 105
 From hallow'd ground th' unholy, and denounce
 To them and to their progeny from thence
 Perpetual banishment. Yet lest they faint
 At the sad sentence rigorously urg'd,
 For I behold them soften'd and with tears 110
 Bewailing their excess, all terror hide.
 If patiently thy bidding they obey,
 Dismiss them not disconsolate ; reveal
 To Adam what shall come in future days,
 As I shall thee enlighten ; intermix 115
 My cov'nant in the woman's seed renew'd ;
 So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace :
 And on the east side of the garden place,
 Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,

106 *drive out*] See Adamus Exsul of Grotius, p. 72.

' Vos ergo, Cherubi Cœlites ! mihi quos ego
 Legi ministros, ite ! et horto pellite
 Par istud hominum ! Sacra deliciis loca
 Miseri relinquant ! alia telluris sola
 Glebasque quarant, et parentem exerceant ! '

111 *excess*] Eve's intemperance. Spens. ii. 12. *Bentl. MS.*

118 *And on the east*] See Adamus Exsul of Grotius, p. 72.

' Vos state in aditu memoris, ortivam ad plagam,
 Et impeditæ flammeo versatilis
 Mucrone teli, ne quis infigat pedem ! '

Cherubic watch, and of a sword the flame 125
 Wide waving, all approach far off to fright,
 And guard all passage to the Tree of Life :
 Lest Paradise a receptacle prove
 To spirits foul, and all my trees their prey,
 With whose stol'n fruit man once more to delude.

He ceas'd ; and th' archangelic pow'r prepar'd
 For swift descent, with him the cohort bright
 Of watchful cherubim ; four faces each
 Had, like a double Janus ; all their shape
 Spangled with eyes more numerous than those 130
 Of Argus, and more wakeful than to drowze,
 Charm'd with Arcadian pipe, the pastoral reed
 Of Hermes, or his opiate rod. Meanwhile,
 To resalute the world with sacred light
 Leucothea wak'd, and with fresh dews imbalm'd
 The earth, when Adam and first matron Eve
 Had ended now their orisons, and found
 Strength added from above, new hope to spring
 Out of despair, joy, but with fear yet link'd ;
 Which thus to Eve his welcome words renew'd. 140

Eve, easily may faith admit, that all
 The good which we enjoy from heaven descends ;
 But that from us aught should ascend to heaven
 So prevalent as to concern the mind
 Of God high-bless'd, or to incline his will, 145
 Hard to belief may seem ; yet this will prayer,
 Or one short sigh of human breath, upborne

¹³¹ *Of*] 'Of fabled Argus, wakeful not to drowze.'

Even to the seat of God. For since I sought
 By prayer th' offended Deity to appease,
 Kneel'd and before him humbled all my heart, 150
 Methought I saw him placable and mild,
 Bending his ear : persuasion in me grew
 That I was heard with favour ; peace return'd
 Home to my breast, and to my memory
 His promise, that thy seed shall bruise our foe ; 155
 Which, then not minded in dismay, yet now
 Assures me that the bitterness of death
 Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee,
 Eve rightly call'd, mother of all mankind,
 Mother of all things living, since by thee 160
 Man is to live, and all things live for man.

To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek.
 Ill worthy I such title should belong
 To me transgressor, who, for thee ordain'd
 A help, became thy snare : to me reproach 165
 Rather belongs, distrust, and all dispraise :
 But infinite in pardon was my Judge,
 That I, who first brought death on all, am grac'd
 The source of life ; next favourable thou,
 Who highly thus to entitle me vouchsaf'st, 170
 Far other name deserving. But the field
 To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,
 Though after sleepless night ; for see, the morn,
 All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins

¹⁷⁴ *begins*] Shakesp. Hen. IV. p. i. act iii. sc. 1.

———— ' The heavenly-harness'd team
Begins his golden *progress* in the east.'

Newton.

Her rosy progress smiling ; let us forth, 175
 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,
 Where'er our day's work lies, though now enjoin'd
 Laborious, till day droop ; while here we dwell,
 What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks ?
 Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content. 180

So spake, so wish'd much-humbled Eve ; but fate
 Subscrib'd not ; nature first gave signs, impress'd
 On bird, beast, air, air suddenly eclips'd
 After short blush of morn : nigh in her sight
 The bird of Jove, stoop'd from his aery tower, 185
 Two birds of gayest plume before him drove :
 Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,
 First hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace,
 Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind ;
 Direct to th' eastern gate was bent their flight. 190
 Adam observ'd, and, with his eye the chase
 Pursuing, not unmov'd to Eve thus spake.

O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,
 Which heaven by these mute signs in nature shows
 Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn 195
 Us haply too secure of our discharge
 From penalty, because from death releas'd
 Some days ; how long, and what till then our life,
 Who knows, or more than this, that we are dust,
 And thither must return and be no more ? 200
 Why else this double object in our sight

¹⁸² *Subscrib'd*] Shakespeare's *Meas. for Meas.* act ii. sc. 4.

'Admit no other way to save his life,

As I subscribe not that.'

Upton.

Of flight pursu'd in th' air, and o'er the ground,
 One way the selfsame hour? Why in the east
 Darkness ere day's mid-course, and morning light
 More orient in yon western cloud, that draws ²⁰⁵
 O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,
 And slow descends, with something heavenly
 fraught?

He err'd not, for by this the heavenly bands
 Down from a sky of jasper lighted now
 In Paradise, and on a hill made halt, ²¹⁰
 A glorious apparition, had not doubt
 And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adam's eye.
 Not that more glorious, when the angels met
 Jacob in Mahanaim, where he saw
 The field pavilion'd with his guardians bright; ²¹⁵
 Nor that which on the flaming mount appear'd
 In Dothan, cover'd with a camp of fire,

²⁰⁴ *morning light*] So in the *Adamus Exsul* of Grotius, p. 78.
 Eve says,

'Quis subitus ardor iste? quæ lux emicat?
 Corripuit hortum flamma, et excelsæ arbores
 Ardent sine igne, fervidumque incendium
 Trepide vagatur: qualibus cælum nitet
 Illustre facibus, integrum flagrat nemus.
 Fugiamus æstus! ista divinæ manus
 Sunt opera, quæ nos ire in exsilium jubet.'

²⁰⁵ *draws*] So D. Heinsius;

'Rubore cælum prævio Aurora imbuat,
 Primamque puræ purpuram nubes trahunt.'

Herodes, p. 220.

²¹⁵ *pavilion'd*] Shakesp. *Henry V.* act i. sc. 2.

'And lie *pavilion'd* in the fields of France.' *Bowle*.

Against the Syrian king, who to surprise
 One man assassin-like had levy'd war,
 War unproclaim'd. The princely hierarch 230
 In their bright stand there left his powers to seize
 Possession of the garden ; he alone,
 To find where Adam shelter'd, took his way,
 Not unperceiv'd of Adam, who to Eve,
 While the great visitant approach'd, thus spake.

Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps
 Of us will soon determine, or impose
 New laws to be observ'd ; for I descry
 From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill,
 One of the heavenly host, and by his gait 235
 None of the meanest, some great potentate,
 Or of the thrones above, such majesty
 Invests him coming ; yet not terrible,
 That I should fear, nor sociably mild,
 As Raphael, that I should much confide, 236
 But solemn and sublime, whom not to offend
 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.

He ended ; and th' archangel soon drew nigh,
 Not in his shape celestial, but as man
 Clad to meet man ; over his lucid arms 240
 A military vest of purple flow'd,
 Livelier than Melibœan, or the grain
 Of Sarra, worn by kings and heroes old

²³ Or] Lord of the Thrones above. *Bentl. MS.*

²⁴² *Melibœan*] Virg. *Æn.* V. 251.

'*Purpura Mæandro duplici Melibœa cucurrit.*'
 and Georg. ii. 506. '*Sarrano indormiat ostro.*' *Hume.*

In time of truce ; Iris had dipp'd the woof ;
 His starry helm unbuckled show'd him prime ²⁴⁵
 In manhood where youth ended ; by his side
 As in a glistening zodiac hung the sword,
 Satan's dire dread, and in his hand the spear.
 Adam bow'd low ; he kingly from his state
 Incl'in'd not, but his coming thus declar'd. ²⁵⁰

Adam, heaven's high behest no preface needs :
 Sufficient that thy prayers are heard, and death,
 Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,
 Defeated of his seizure many days ²⁵⁴
 Given thee of grace, wherein thou may'st repent,
 And one bad act with many deeds well done
 May'st cover : well may then thy Lord appeas'd
 Redeem thee quite from death's rapacious claim ;
 But longer in this paradise to dwell
 Permits not : to remove thee I am come, ²⁶⁰
 And send thee from the garden forth to till
 The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil.

He added not, for Adam at the news
 Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,
 That all his senses bound ; Eve, who unseen ²⁶⁵
 Yet all had heard, with audible lament
 Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

O unexpected stroke, worse than of death !

²⁵⁰ *Incl'in'd*] See Spens. F. Qu. V. ix. 34.

'To whom she eke *inclyning* her withall.'

and Fairfax's Tasso, ix. 60.

Bowle.

²⁶⁴ *gripe*] Browne's Brit. Pas. B. i. s. iii.

'Free from the *gripes of sorrow* every one.' *Todd.*

Must I thus leave thee, Paradise? thus leave 280
 Thee, native soil, these happy walks and shades,
 Fit haunt of gods? where I had hope to spend,
 Quiet though sad, the respite of that day
 That must be mortal to us both. O flowers,
 That never will in other climate grow,
 My early visitation, and my last 285
 At even, which I bred up with tender hand
 From the first op'ning bud, and gave ye names,
 Who now shall rear ye to the sun, or rank
 Your tribes, and water from th' ambrosial fount?
 Thee lastly, nuptial bower, by me adorn'd 290
 With what to sight or smell was sweet; from thee
 How shall I part, and whither wander down
 Into a lower world, to this obscure
 And wild? how shall we breathe in other air
 Less pure, accustom'd to immortal fruits? 295
 Whom thus the angel interrupted mild.
 Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign
 What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart,
 Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine:
 Thy going is not lonely, with thee goes 300

278 *O flowers*] See Ovidii Metam. v. 899, of Proserpine.

'Collecti flores tunicis cecidere remis:

Tantaque simplicitas puerilibus adfuit annis,

Hæc quoque virgineum movit jactura dolorem.'

290 *nuptial*] Compare Euripidis Alcestis, v. 248.

Γαῖά τε καὶ μελάθρων στέγαι

Νυμφίδωί τε κοῖται πατρίας Ἰωλκοῦ. Todd.

Thy husband, him to follow thou art bound;
 Where he abides, think there thy native soil.
 Adam, by this from the cold sudden damp
 Recovering, and his scatter'd spirits return'd,
 To Michael thus his humble words address'd. 295

Celestial! whether among the thrones, or nam'd
 Of them the highest, for such of shape may seem
 Prince above princes, gently hast thou told
 Thy message, which might else in telling wound,
 And in performing end us; what besides 300
 Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,
 Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,
 Departure from this happy place, our sweet
 Recess, and only consolation left
 Familiar to our eyes; all places else 305
 Inhospitable appear and desolate,
 Nor knowing us nor known; and if by prayer
 Incessant I could hope to change the will
 Of him who all things can, I would not cease
 To weary him with my assiduous cries. 310
 But prayer against his absolute decree
 No more avails than breath against the wind,
 Blown stifling back on him that breathes it forth:
 Therefore to his great bidding I submit.
 This most afflicts me, that departing hence 315
 As from his face I shall be hid, depriv'd
 His blessed count'nance; here I could frequent,
 With worship, place by place, where he vouchsaf'd

310 weary] So Hor. Od. i. ii. 26. 'Prece qua fatigent.'

Todd.

Presence divine, and to my sons relate,
 ' On this mount he appear'd, under this tree 320
 Stood visible, among these pines his voice
 I heard, here with him at this fountain talk'd :
 So many grateful altars I would rear
 Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone
 Of lustre from the brook, in memory, 325
 Or monument to ages, and thereon
 Offer sweet smelling gums, and fruits, and flowers :
 In yonder nether world where shall I seek
 His bright appearances, or footstep trace ?
 For though I fled him angry, yet, recall'd 330
 To life prolong'd and promis'd race, I now
 Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts
 Of glory, and far off his steps adore.

To whom thus Michael with regard benign.
 Adam, thou know'st heaven his, and all the
 earth, 335

Not this rock only ; his omnipresence fills
 Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives,
 Fomented by his virtual power and warm'd :
 All th' earth he gave thee to possess and rule,
 No despicable gift ; surmise not then 340
 His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd
 Of paradise or Eden : this had been
 Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread

325 *memory*] So Beaum. and Fletch. D. Marriage, act ii.
 sc. i.

' The *memory* and *monuments* of good men
 Are more than lives.' *Todd.*

All generations, and had hither come
 From all the ends of th' earth, to celebrate 345
 And reverence thee their great progenitor.
 But this preeminence thou hast lost, brought down
 To dwell on even ground now with thy sons :
 Yet doubt not but in valley and in plain
 God is as here, and will be found alike 350
 Present, and of his presence many a sign
 Still following thee, still compassing thee round
 With goodness and paternal love, his face
 Express, and of his steps the track divine.
 Which that thou mayst believe, and be confirm'd
 Ere thou from hence depart, know, I am sent 355
 To show thee what shall come in future days
 To thee and to thy offspring ; good with bad
 Expect to hear, supernal grace contending
 With sinfulness of men ; thereby to learn 360
 True patience, and to temper joy with fear
 And pious sorrow, equally inur'd
 By moderation either state to bear,
 Prosperous or adverse : so shalt thou lead
 Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure 365
 Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend
 This hill ; let Eve, for I have drench'd her eyes,
 Here sleep below ; while thou to foresight wak'st,
 As once thou slept'st, while she to life was form'd.
 To whom thus Adam gratefully reply'd. 370
 Ascend, I follow thee, safe guide, the path

344 *hither*] So the first ed. read,—*thither* most of the later.
Newton.

Thou lead'st me, and to the hand of heaven submit,
 However chast'ning, to the evil turn
 My obvious breast, arming to overcome
 By suffering, and earn rest from labour won, 375
 If so I may attain. So both ascend
 In the visions of God. It was a hill
 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top
 The hemisphere of earth in clearest ken
 Stretch'd out to the amplest reach of prospect lay.
 Not higher that hill nor wider looking round, 381
 Whereon for different cause the tempter set
 Our second Adam in the wilderness,
 To show him all earth's kingdoms and their glory.
 His eye might there command wherever stood 385
 City of old or modern fame, the seat
 Of mightiest empire, from the destin'd walls
 Of Cambalu, seat of Cathaian Can,
 And Samarcand by Oxus, Temir's throne,
 To Paquin of Sinæan kings, and thence 390
 To Agra and Lahor of great Mogul,
 Down to the golden Chersonese, or where
 The Persian in Ecbatan sat, or since
 In Hispahan, or where the Russian Czar
 In Mosco, or the Sultan in Bizance, 395
 Turchestan-born; nor could his eye not ken

374 *arming*] Aiming. *Bentl. MS.*

375 *suffering*] Virg. *Æn.* V. 710.

'Quidquid erit, superanda omnis fortuna ferendo est.'

Hume.

Th' empire of Negus to his utmost port
 Ercoco, and the less maritime kings
 Mombaza, and Quiloa, and Melind,
 And Sofala thought Ophir, to the realm 400
 Of Congo, and Angola farthest south ;
 Or thence from Niger flood to Atlas mount
 The kingdoms of Almansor, Fez, and Sus,
 Morocco, and Algiers, and Tremisen ;
 Or Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway
 The world : in spirit perhaps he also saw
 Rich Mexico the seat of Motezume,
 And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat
 Of Atabalipa, and yet unspoil'd
 Guiana, whose great city Geryon's sons 410
 Call El Dorado : but to nobler sights
 Michael from Adam's eyes the film remov'd,
 Which that false fruit that promis'd clearer sight
 Had bred ; then purg'd with euphrasy and rue
 The visual nerve, for he had much to see ; 415
 And from the well of life three drops instill'd.
 So deep the power of these ingredients pierc'd,
 Ev'n to the inmost seat of mental sight,

³⁹⁷ *Negus*] See Liale's Du Bartas, p. 115.

⁴⁰⁰ *Sofala*] See Bentleii Epist. ed. Burneii, p. 105, and Bruce's Travels, vol. ii. p. 362.

⁴¹² *film*] See Dante Il Purgat. l. 94.

'Va dunque, e fa che tu costui ricinga
 D' un giunco schietto, e che gli lavi 'l viso,
 Sì ch' ogni sucidume quindi stinga.'

⁴¹⁵ *mental sight*] Pulci, c. xxv. st. 308.

'Ora all' *occhio mentale* è conceduto
 Di riveder ciò che tu hai veduto.' *Bowle.*

That Adam, now enforc'd to close his eyes,
Sunk down, and all his spirits became entranc'd :
But him the gentle angel by the hand
Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold
Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought
In some to spring from thee, who never touch'd ⁴³⁸
Th' excepted tree, nor with the snake conspir'd,
Nor sinn'd thy sin; yet from that sin derive
Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he open'd, and beheld a field,
Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves ⁴³⁹
New reap'd, the other part sheep-walks and folds :
I' th' midst an altar as the land-mark stood,
Rustic, of grassy sord ; thither anon
A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought
First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf,
Uncull'd, as came to hand ; a shepherd next
More meek came with the firstlings of his flock
• Choicest and best ; then sacrificing laid
The inwards and their fat, with incense strew'd,
On the cleft wood, and all due rites perform'd. ⁴⁴⁰
His off'ring soon propitious fire from heaven
Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steam ;
The other's not, for his was not sincere :

⁴³⁸ *sord*] So in Shakesp. *Winter's Tale*. (ed. folio. 1623, p. 292.) 'Ran on the greene-sord.' Fenton prints 'sod;' which all succeeding editions adopted, till Newton restored the original word; except that Bentley printed it (very affectedly, says Newton) *swerð*. *Todd*.

⁴³⁹ *green*] Brown. *Bentl. MS.*

Whereat he inly rag'd, and, as they talk'd,
 Smote him into the midriff with a stone ⁴⁴⁵
 That beat out life; he fell, and deadly pale
 Groan'd out his soul with gushing blood effus'd.
 Much at that sight was Adam in his heart
 Dismay'd, and thus in haste to th' angel cry'd.

O teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n ⁴⁵⁰
 To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd;
 Is piety thus and pure devotion paid?

T' whom Michael thus, he also mov'd, reply'd.
 These two are brethren, Adam, and to come
 Out of thy loins; th' unjust the just hath slain, ⁴⁵⁵
 For envy that his brother's offering found
 From heaven acceptance; but the bloody fact
 Will be aveng'd, and th' other's faith approv'd
 Lose no reward, though here thou see him die,
 Rolling in dust and gore. To which our sire. ⁴⁶⁰

Alas, both for the deed and for the cause!
 But have I now seen Death? is this the way
 I must return to native dust? O sight
 Of terror, foul and ugly to behold,
 Horrid to think, how horrible to feel! ⁴⁶⁵

To whom thus Michael. Death thou hast seen
 In his first shape on man; but many shapes

⁴⁶⁷ *many shapes*] Compare A. Ramsæi Poem. Sacr. p. 61.

' ——— O quot millia mittent

Rupis inaccessæ prærupta cacumina Letho!'

and the following lines.

⁴⁶⁷ *many*] Seneca Phœn. I. 151.

' Ubique mors est, —

—— Mille ad hanc aditus patent.'

Newton.

Of Death, and many are the ways that lead
 To his grim cave, all dismal; yet to sense
 More terrible at th' entrance than within. 478
 Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,
 By fire, flood, famine, by intemperance more
 In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring
 Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew
 Before thee shall appear; that thou may'st know
 What misery th' inabstinence of Eve 479
 Shall bring on men. Immediately a place
 Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisome, dark;
 A lazar-house it seem'd, wherein were laid
 Numbers of all diseases, all maladies 480
 Of ghastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms
 Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kinds,
 Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,
 Intestine stone and ulcer, colic pangs,
 Dæmoniac frenzy, moping melancholy, 485
 And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy,
 Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence,
 Dropsies, and asthmas, and joint-racking rheums.
 Dire was the tossing, deep the groans; Despair
 Tended the sick, busiest from couch to couch; 490
 And over them triumphant Death his dart
 Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invoc'd
 With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.
 Sight so deform what heart of rock could long
 Dry-ey'd behold? Adam could not, but wept, 495

482 *feverous*] Hor. Od. i. iii. 30. 'Febrium cohors.'

Todd.

Though not of woman born ; compassion quell'd
 His best of man, and gave him up to tears
 A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess,
 And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.

O miserable mankind, to what fall 508
 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd !
 Better end here unborn. Why is life giv'n
 To be thus wrested from us ? rather why
 Obtruded on us thus ? who, if we knew
 What we receive, would either not accept 509
 Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,
 Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus
 Th' image of God in man, created once
 So goodly and erect, though faulty since,
 To such unsightly sufferings be debas'd 510
 Under inhuman pains ? Why should not man,
 Retaining still divine similitude
 In part, from such deformities be free,
 And for his Maker's image sake exempt ?

Their Maker's image, answer'd Michael, then
 Forsook them, when themselves they vilify'd 511
 To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took
 His image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,
 Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.
 Therefore so abject is their punishment, 512
 Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own,
 Or if his likeness, by themselves defac'd,

⁴⁹⁷ *gave him up*] Shakesp. Hen. V. act iv. sc. 6.

'But all my mother came into my eyes

And gave me up to tears.'

Newton.

While they pervert pure nature's healthful rules
 To loathsome sickness, worthily, since they
 God's image did not reverence in themselves. 225

I yield it just, said Adam, and submit.
 But is there yet no other way, besides
 These painful passages, how we may come
 To death, and mix with our connatural dust?

There is, said Michael, if thou well observe 580
 The rule of Not too much, by temperance taught
 In what thou eat'st and drink'st, seeking from thence
 Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,
 Till many years over thy head return :
 So may'st thou live, till like ripe fruit thou drop
 Into thy mother's lap, or be with ease 585
 Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd, for death mature.
 This is old age ; but then thou must outlive
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will
 change

To wither'd, weak, and gray : thy senses then 590
 Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forego
 To what thou hast, and for the air of youth
 Hopeful and cheerful in thy blood will reign
 A melancholy damp of cold and dry
 To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume 595
 The balm of life. To whom our ancestor.

Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong
 Life much, bent rather how I may be quit

587 *mature*] v. Cic. de Senectute. xix. 'Et quasi poma ex
 arboribus, *cruda* si sint, vi avelluntur: si *matura*, et cocta,
 decidunt.' *Newton*.

Fairest and easiest of this cumbrous charge,
 Which I must keep till my appointed day ⁵⁵⁰
 Of rend'ring up, and patiently attend
 My dissolution. Michael reply'd.

Nor love thy life, nor hate ; but what thou liv'st
 Live well; how long or short permit to heaven :
 And now prepare thee for another sight. ⁵⁵⁵

He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon
 Were tents of various hue ; by some were herds
 Of cattle grazing : others, whence the sound
 Of instruments that made melodious chime
 Was heard, of harp and organ ; and who mov'd
 Their stops and chords was seen : his volant touch
 Instinct through all proportions low and high
 Fled and pursu'd transverse the resonant fugue.
 In other part stood one who, at the forge
 Labouring, two massy clods of iron and brass ⁵⁶⁰
 Had melted, whether found where casual fire
 Had wasted woods on mountain or in vale,

⁵⁵¹ *attend*] In the first edition;

' Which I must keep till my appointed day
 Of rendering up. Michael to him replied.' *Newton.*

⁵⁵³ *hate*] Martial, lib. x.

' Summum nec metuas diem, nec optes.' *Newton.*

⁵⁵⁴ *permit*] Permite Divis. Hor. Od. i. ix. 9. *Newton.*

⁵⁵⁵ *clods*] From Lucretius, V. 1239.

' Quod superest, æs, atque aurum, ferrumque repertum est,
 Et simul argenti pondus, plumbique potestas,
 Ignis ubi ingentis sylvas ardore cremarat
 Montibus in magnis.' *Jortin.*

Down to the veins of earth, thence gliding hot
 To some cave's mouth, or whether wash'd by stream
 From underground; the liquid ore he drain'd ⁵⁷⁰
 Into fit moulds prepar'd; from which he form'd
 First his own tools; then, what might else be wrought
 Fusil or grav'n in metal. After these,
 But on the hither side, a different sort
 From the high neighbouring hills, which was their
 seat, ⁵⁷⁵

Down to the plain descended: by their guise
 Just men they seem'd, and all their study bent
 To worship God aright, and know his works
 Not hid, nor those things last, which might preserve
 Freedom and peace to men: they on the plain
 Long had not walk'd, when from the tents behold
 A bevy of fair women, richly gay ⁵⁸²
 In gems and wanton dress; to the harp they sung
 Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on:
 The men, tho' grave, ey'd them, and let their eyes
 Rove without rein, till, in the amorous net ⁵⁸⁶
 Fast caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose:
 And now of love they treat, till the evening star,
 Love's harbinger, appear'd; then all in heat
 They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke ⁵⁹⁰

⁵⁸² *bevy*] 'A dancing *bevy* of fair lights.' Sir G. Sherburne's Poems, p. 37.

⁵⁸⁶ *amorous*] So Ariosto *Orl. Fur.* I. 12.

'Ch' all' *amoroſe reti* il tenea involto.' *Bowle*.

⁵⁸⁷ *Fast*] So in Milton's own ed. In Tonson's early ed. *First* caught,' which Tickell and Fenton followed. *Todd*.

Hymen, then first to marriage rites invok'd ;
 With feast and music all the tents resound.
 Such happy interview and fair event
 Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flowers,
 And charming symphonies attach'd the heart 500
 Of Adam, soon inclin'd to admit delight,
 The bent of nature; which he thus express'd.

True opener of mine eyes, prime angel bless'd,
 Much better seems this vision, and more hope
 Of peaceful days portends, than those two past ;
 Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse,
 Here nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends.

To whom thus Michael. Judge not what is best
 By pleasure, though to nature seeming meet,
 Created, as thou art, to nobler end 600
 Holy and pure, conformity divine.
 Those tents, thou saw'st so pleasant, were the tents
 Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race
 Who slew his brother ; studious they appear
 Of arts that polish life, inventors rare, 610
 Unmindful of their Maker, though his spirit
 Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd none.
 Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget ;
 For that fair female troop thou saw'st, that seem'd
 Of goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay, 615
 Yet empty of all good wherein consists
 Woman's domestic honour and chief praise ;
 Bred only and completed to the taste
 Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,
 To dress, and troul the tongue, and roll the eye.

To these that sober race of men, whose lives
 Religious titled them the sons of God,
 Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame
 Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles
 Of these fair atheists; and now swim in joy, 605
 Erelong to swim at large; and laugh, for which
 The world erelong a world of tears must weep.

To whom thus Adam of short joy bereft.
 O pity and shame, that they, who to live well
 Enter'd so fair, should turn aside to tread 610
 Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint!
 But still I see the tenor of man's woe
 Holds on the same, from woman to begin.

From man's effeminate slackness it begins,
 Said th' angel, who should better hold his place
 By wisdom and superior gifts receiv'd. 615
 But now prepare thee for another scene.

He look'd, and saw wide territory spread
 Before him, towns, and rural works between,
 Cities of men with lofty gates and towers, 620
 Concourse in arms, fierce faces threat'ning war,
 Giants of mighty bone, and bold emprise;
 Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,
 Single, or in array of battle rang'd

625 *laugh*] Milton's own pointing of this passage was thus:

' And now swim in joy
 (Erelong to swim at large) and laugh; for which
 The world erelong a world of tears must weep.'

Newton.

642 *bold emprise*] Spens. F. Qu. ii. iii. 35.

'Is far renown'd through many *bold emprise*.' *Todd.*

Both horse and foot, nor idly must'ring stood: ⁶⁴⁵
 One way a band select from forage drives
 A herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kipe,
 From a fat meadow ground; or fleecy flock,
 Ewes and their bleating lambs, over the plain,
 Their booty; scarce with life the shepherds fly,
 But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray. ⁶⁵¹
 With cruel tournament the squadrons join;
 Where cattle pastur'd late, now scatter'd lies
 With carcasses and arms th' ensanguin'd field,
 Deserted. Others to a city strong ⁶⁵⁵
 Lay siege, encamp'd, by battery, scale, and mine,
 Assaulting; others from the wall defend
 With dart and javelin, stones and sulphurous fire;
 On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.
 In other part the scepter'd heralds call ⁶⁶⁰
 To council in the city gates: anon
 Gray-headed men and grave, with warriors mix'd,
 Assemble, and harangues are heard; but soon
 In factious opposition; till at last
 Of middle age one rising, eminent ⁶⁶⁵
 In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,
 Of justice, of religion, truth and peace,
 And judgment from above: him old and young

⁶⁵¹ *makes*] So altered in the second edition. It was 'tacks
 a bloody fray' in the first. *Newton*.

⁶⁶⁰ *heralds*] *Newton* has pointed out several passages in
Homer's description of the shield of *Achilles*, which *Milton*
 had in his mind, *Iliad* xviii. 550, &c. 587, &c. 491, &c. 527,
 &c. 509, &c. 508, &c.

Exploded, and had seiz'd with violent hands,
 Had not a cloud descending snatch'd him thence
 Unseen amid the throng: so violence 671
 Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,
 Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.
 Adam was all in tears, and to his guide
 Lamenting turn'd full sad; O! what are these,
 Death's ministers, not men, who thus deal death
 Inhumanly to men, and multiply 677
 Ten thousand-fold the sin of him who slew
 His brother; for of whom such massacre
 Make they but of their brethren, men of men?
 But who was that just man, whom had not heaven
 Rescu'd, had in his righteousness been lost?

To whom thus Michael. These are the product
 Of those ill mated marriages thou saw'st;
 Where good with bad were match'd, who of them-
 Abhor to join; and by imprudence mix'd [selves
 Produce prodigious births of body or mind.
 Such were these giants, men of high renown;
 For in those days might only shall be admir'd,
 And valour and heroic virtue call'd: 680
 To overcome in battle, and subdue
 Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite
 Manslaughter, shall be held the highest pitch
 Of human glory, and for glory done

⁶⁷⁶ *Death's*] 'Death's progeny, not mine.' *Bentl. MS.*

⁶⁸⁴ *done*] This is considered a very difficult passage. Bentley changed 'done' into 'won,' and 'of triumph,' into 'or triumph.' I understand it thus: 'To overcome in battle, and

Of triumph to be styl'd great conquerors, 695
 Patrons of mankind, gods, and sons of gods,
 Destroyers rightlier call'd and plagues of men.
 Thus fame shall be achiev'd, renown on earth,
 And what most merits fame in silence hid.
 But he, the seventh from thee, whom thou beheld'st
 The only righteous in a world perverse, 701
 And therefore hated, therefore so beset
 With foes for daring single to be just,
 And utter odious truth, that God would come
 To judge them with his saints; him the most High
 Wrapt in a balmy cloud with winged steeds 705
 Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God
 High in salvation and the climes of bliss,
 Exempt from death: to show thee what reward
 Awaits the good, the rest what punishment: 710
 Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold:
 He look'd, and saw the face of things quite chang'd,
 The brazen throat of war had ceas'd to roar;
 All now was turn'd to jollity and game,
 To luxury and riot, feast and dance, 715
 Marrying or prostituting as befell,
 Rape or adultery, where passing fair

bring home spoils, shall be held the highest pitch of glory; and for the glory obtained, it shall be highest pitch of triumph to be styled conquerors, &c.; but the distinction between 'glory' and 'triumph' does not seem sufficiently strong, and 'to do glory' is a harsh expression.

⁷¹¹ Which] The syntax is remarkable, 'which' governed not by the verb next following, but by the last in the sentence.

'Which, now direct thine eyes, and soon behold.' *Newton.*

Allur'd them ; thence from cups to civil broils.
 At length a reverend sire among them came,
 And of their doings great dislike declar'd, 720
 And testify'd against their ways ; he oft
 Frequented their assemblies, whereso met,
 Triumphs, or festivals, and to them preach'd
 Conversion and repentance, as to souls
 In prison under judgments imminent : 725
 But all in vain : which when he saw, he ceas'd
 Contending, and remov'd his tents far off :
 Then from the mountain hewing timber tall,
 Began to build a vessel of huge bulk,
 Measur'd by cubit, length, and breadth, and height,
 Smear'd round with pitch, and in the side a door
 Contriv'd, and of provisions laid in large
 For man and beast : when lo, a wonder strange !
 Of every beast, and bird, and insect small,
 Came sevens, and pairs, and enter'd in, as taught
 Their order : last the sire and his three sons 735
 With their four wives ; and God made fast the door.
 Meanwhile the south wind rose, and, with black
 Wide hovering, all the clouds together drove [wings
 From under heaven ; the hills to their supply 740
 Vapour, and exhalation dusk and moist,
 Sent up amain : and now the thicken'd sky
 Like a dark ceiling stood ; down rush'd the rain

⁷¹⁹ *sire*] See Braithwait's *Honest Ghost*, p. 128, 'A grave reverend sire.'

⁷²² *Triumphs*] Revels, 713, 730, 788. *Bentl. MS.*

⁷⁴² *ceiling*] Drummond in his *Shadow of Judgment*.

'The *ceiling* of the crystal round above.' *Todd.*

Impetuous, and continu'd till the earth
 No more was seen ; the floating vessel swum 748
 Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow
 Rode tilting o'er the waves ; all dwellings else
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp
 Deep under water roll'd ; sea cover'd sea,
 Sea without shore, and in their palaces, 750
 Where luxury late reign'd, sea-monsters whelp'd
 And stabled ; of mankind, so numerous late,
 All left in one small bottom swum imbark'd.
 How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold
 The end of all thy offspring, end so sad, 755
 Depopulation ! thee another flood,
 Of tears and sorrow a flood, thee also drown'd,
 And sunk thee as thy sons ; till gently rear'd
 By th' angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,
 Though comfortless, as when a father mourns 760
 His children, all in view destroy'd at once ;
 And scarce to th' angel utter'dst thus thy plaint.
 O visions ill foreseen ! better had I
 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had borne
 My part of evil only, each day's lot 765
 Enough to bear ; those now, that were dispens'd

752 *stabled*] See Lisle's *Du Bartas*, p. 169, 'Nor stablest once thy team,' and Casimiri *Sarb. Carm. Lib. iv. c. xxvii.*

'Queis, modo liberi,
 Festo choreas agmine plausimus,
 Delphines insultant plateis,
 Et vacuas spaciosa cete,
 Ludunt per aulas, ac thalamos pigræ
 Pressere phocæ.'

The burden of many ages, on me light
 At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth
 Abortive, to torment me ere their being,
 With thought that they must be. Let no man seek
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall 771
 Him or his children ; evil he may be sure,
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,
 And he the future evil shall no less
 In apprehension than in substance feel, 775
 Grievous to bear : but that care now is past,
 Man is not whom to warn ; those few escap'd
 Famine and anguish will at last consume
 Wand'ring that wat'ry desert. I had hope,
 When violence was ceas'd, and war on earth, 780
 All would have then gone well ; peace would have
 crown'd

With length of happy days the race of man ;
 But I was far deceiv'd ; for now I see
 Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.
 How comes it thus ? unfold, celestial guide, 785
 And whether here the race of man will end.

To whom thus Michael. Those whom last thou
 In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they [saw'st
 First seen in acts of prowess eminent
 And great exploits, but of true virtue void ; 790
 Who having spill'd much blood, and done much
 waste,

778 *Famine*] So Ovid Met. i. 811.

'Maximus pars unda rapitur, quibus unda pepercit
 Illos longa domant inopi jejunia victu.' *Newton.*

Subduing nations, and achiev'd thereby
 Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,
 Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and
 sloth,
 Surfeit, and lust, till wantonness and pride 798
 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.
 The conquer'd also and enslav'd by war
 Shall with their freedom lost all virtue lose
 And fear of God, from whom their piety feign'd
 In sharp contest of battle found no aid 800
 Against invaders ; therefore cool'd in zeal
 Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,
 Worldly, or dissolute, on what their lords
 Shall leave them to enjoy, for th' earth shall bear
 More than enough, that temperance may be try'd :
 So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd,
 Justice and temperance, truth and faith forgot ;
 One man except, the only son of light
 In a dark age, against example good,
 Against allurements, custom, and a world 810
 Offended ; fearless of reproach and scorn,
 Or violence, he of their wicked ways
 Shall them admonish, and before them set
 The paths of righteousness, how much more safe
 And full of peace, denouncing wrath to come 815
 On their impenitence ; and shall return
 Of them derided, but of God observ'd
 The one just man alive ; by his command

817 *observ'd*] Observations honoured. C. J.

Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheld'st,
 To save himself and household from amidst 820
 A world devote to universal wreck.
 No sooner he with them of man and beast
 Select for life shall in the ark be lodg'd,
 And shelter'd round, but all the cataracts
 Of heaven set open on the earth shall pour 825
 Rain day and night, all fountains of the deep
 Broke up shall heave the ocean to usurp
 Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise
 Above the highest hills: then shall this mount
 Of Paradise by might of waves be mov'd 830
 Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees adrift,
 Down the great river to the op'ning gulf,
 And there take root, an island salt and bare,
 The haunt of seals, and orcs, and sea-mews' clang;

⁸²¹ *horned*] See Browne's Britan. Past. ii. p. 190.

'And now the *horned flood* bore to our isle.'

Hor. Od. iv. 14. 25.

'Sic tauriformis volvitur Aufidus.'

and Virg. Geo. iv. 371. Æn. viii. 77.

⁸²⁵ *haunt*] Virg. Æn. V. 128. 'Apricis statio gratissima
 mergis.' Hom. Hymn. Apoll. 77

Ποῦλόποδες δ' ἐν ἐμοὶ θαλάμας, φῶκαί τε μέλαιναί,
 Οἰκία ποίησονται ἀκηδέα.

⁸²⁶ *clang*] Hom. Il. iii. 8. Stat. Theb. v. 15, xii. 515.

—— 'Grues Aquilone fugatæ

Cum videre Pharon; tunc æthera latius implent
 Tunc hilari clangore sonant.'

To teach thee that God attributes to place
 No sanctity, if none be thither brought
 By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.
 And now what further shall ensue, behold. 830

He look'd, and saw the ark hull on the flood,
 Which now abated, for the clouds were fled,
 Driv'n by a keen north-wind, that blowing dry
 Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decay'd;
 And the clear sun on his wide wat'ry glass
 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew, 845
 As after thirst, which made their flowing shrink
 From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole
 With soft foot towards the deep, who now had
 stopp'd

His sluices, as the heaven his windows shut.
 The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground
 Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd.
 And now the tops of hills as rocks appear; 850

⁸⁴⁰ *hull*] v. Donne's Poems, p. 316. xxxi. 'A great ship
 overset, or without saile *hulling*.' Queen Elizabeth's Tear,
 by C. Lever, 1607, 4to. F. 2. '*Hulling* upon the river where
 she lay.' Sandys's Psalms, p. 181. 'The ship *hulls*, as the
 billows flow.'

⁸⁴⁷ *tripping*] Drayton applies this word to the flow of
 rivers: Polyolb. Song xiii. 'The Avon *trips* along;' xv.
 'The Isis from her source comes *tripping* with delight;' and
 xxvi. 'Darwin from her fount comes tripping down towards
 Trent.' Todd.

⁸⁴⁸ *soft foot*] See Drakenborch's Note on Sil. Italicus, vi.
 140. p. 298. Lucret. v. 274. 'Liquido pede,' with Wake-
 field's Note, and Jer. Taylor's Sermon on Lady Carbery,
 fol. p. 169.

⁸⁵² *tops*] Backs. vii. 206. Bentl. MS.

With clamour thence the rapid currents drive
 Towards the retreating sea their furious tide.
 Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies, 855
 And after him, the surer messenger,
 A dove, sent forth once and again to spy
 Green tree or ground whereon his foot may light;
 The second time returning, in his bill
 An olive leaf he brings, pacific sign : 860
 Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark
 The ancient sire descends with all his train ;
 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,
 Grateful to heaven, over his head beholds
 A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow 865
 Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,
 Betok'ning peace from God, and cov'nant new.
 Whereat the heart of Adam erst so sad
 Greatly rejoic'd, and thus his joy broke forth.

O thou, who future things canst represent 870
 As present, heav'nly instructor, I revive
 At this last sight, assur'd that man shall live
 With all the creatures, and their seed preserve.
 Far less I now lament for one whole world
 Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice 875
 For one man found so perfect and so just,
 That God vouchsafes to raise another world
 From him, and all his anger to forget.
 But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in heav'n,
 Distended as the brow of God appeas'd ? 880
 Or serve they as a flow'ry verge to bind

880 *brow*] Fenton proposed to read 'The bow of God.'

The fluid skirts of that same wat'ry cloud,
Lest it again dissolve and show'r the earth?

To whom th' archangel. Dextrously thou aim'st ;
So willingly doth God remit his ire, ⁸⁸⁵
Though late repenting him of man deprav'd,
Griev'd at his heart, when looking down he saw
The whole earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh
Corrupting each their way ; yet, those remov'd,
Such grace shall one just man find in his sight,
That he relents, not to blot out mankind, ⁸⁹¹
And makes a covenant never to destroy
The earth again by flood, nor let the sea
Surpass his bounds, nor rain to drown the world
With man therein or beast ; but when he brings
Over the earth a cloud, will therein set ⁸⁹⁶
His triple-colour'd bow, whereon to look,
And call to mind his cov'nant : day and night,
Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost,
Shall hold their course, till fire purge all things new.
Both heaven and earth, wherein the just shall dwell

⁸⁸⁶ *late*] Fenton placed a comma after 'late,' but Bentley removed it, and gave the line agreeably to Milton's own editions.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK XII.

THE ARGUMENT.

THE angel Michael continues from the flood to relate what shall succeed; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain, who that seed of the woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the fall; his incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension; the state of the church till his second coming. Adam, greatly satisfied, and recomforted by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams composed to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

As one who in his journey bates at noon,
 Though bent on speed, so here th' archangel paus'd
 Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd,
 If Adam aught perhaps might interpose;
 Then with transition sweet new speech resumes. ^s
 Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end;
 And man as from a second stock proceed.
 Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceive

¹ *As one*] When the last book was divided into two, in the second edition, these first five lines were added.

Thy mortal sight to fail : objects divine
Must needs impair and weary human sense : 10
Henceforth what is to come I will relate,
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.

This second source of men, while yet but few,
And while the dread of judgment past remainhs
Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity, 15
With some regard to what is just and right
Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace,
Labouring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,
Corn, wine, and oil ; and from the herd, or flock,
Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid, 20
With large wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred feast,
Shall spend their days in joy unblam'd, and dwell
Long time in peace by families and tribes
Under paternal rule ; till one shall rise
Of proud ambitious heart, who not content 25
With fair equality, fraternal state,
Will arrogate dominion undeserv'd
Over his brethren, and quite dispossess
Concord and law of nature from the earth ;
Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game) 30
With war and hostile snare such as refuse
Subjection to his empire tyrannous.
A mighty hunter thence he shall be styl'd
Before the Lord, as in despite of heaven,
Or from heav'n claiming second sov'reignty ; 35
And from rebellion shall derive his name,
Though of rebellion others he accuse.
He with a crew, whom like ambition joins

With him or under him to tyrannize, 59
 Marching from Eden towards the west, shall find
 The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge
 Boils out from under ground, the mouth of hell :
 Of brick and of that stuff they cast to build
 A city and tower, whose top may reach to heaven,
 And get themselves a name, lest far disperst 60
 In foreign lands their memory be lost,
 Regardless whether good or evil fame.
 But GOD, who oft descends to visit men
 Unseen, and through their habitations walks
 To mark their doings, them beholding soon, 61
 Comes down to see their city, ere the tower
 Obstruct heaven-towers, and in derision sets
 Upon their tongues a various spirit, to rase
 Quite out their native language, and instead
 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown. 62
 Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud
 Among the builders, each to other calls
 Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,
 As mock'd they storm ; great laughter was in heav'n,
 And looking down to see the hubbub strange 63

⁴² *mouth*] Type. i. 405. *Bentl. MS.* In this twelfth book, Bentley says, the editor has seldom mixed his pebbles among the author's diamonds.

⁴³ *mouth of hell*] Virg. Georg. iv. 487.

'Tænarias etiam fauces, alta ostia Ditis.' *Newton.*

⁵² *Obstruct*] Approach the clouds. *Bentl. MS.*

⁶⁰ *hubbub*] v. F. Queen. iii. x. 43.

'And shrieking *hubbubs* them approaching nere.'

Bowle.

And hear the din : thus was the building left
Ridiculous, and the work Confusion nam'd.

Whereto thus Adam fatherly displeas'd.

O execrable son ! so to aspire
Above his brethren, to himself assuming 65
Authority usurp'd, from God not given.
He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,
Dominion absolute ; that right we hold
By his donation ; but man over men
He made not lord ; such title to himself 70
Reserving, human left from human free.
But this usurper his encroachment proud
Stays not on man ; to God his tower intends
Siege and defiance. Wretched man ! what food
Will he convey up thither to sustain 75
Himself and his rash army, where thin air
Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,
And famish him of breath, if not of bread ?

To whom thus Michael. Justly thou abhorr'st
That son, who on the quiet state of men 80
Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue
Rational liberty ; yet know withal,
Since thy original lapse, true liberty
Is lost, which always with right reason dwells
Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being : 85
Reason in man obscur'd, or not obey'd,

⁶⁵ *Rational*] National. *Bentl. MS.*

⁶⁸ *thy*] So in Milton's own edition. In Fenton's, Bentley's, and others, it is 'Since *by* original lapse.' *Newton.*

⁸⁵ *Twinn'd*] Some editions read 'twin'd.' *Newton.*

With him or under him to tyrannize, 59
 Marching from Eden towards the west, shall find
 The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge
 Boils out from under ground, the mouth of hell:
 Of brick and of that stuff they cast to build
 A city and tower, whose top may reach to heaven,
 And get themselves a name, lest far disperst 60
 In foreign lands their memory be lost,
 Regardless whether good or evil fame.
 But GOD, who oft descends to visit men
 Unseen, and through their habitations walks
 To mark their doings, them beholding soon, 61
 Comes down to see their city, ere the tower
 Obstruct heaven-towers, and in derision sets
 Upon their tongues a various spirit, to rase
 Quite out their native language, and instead
 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown. 62
 Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud
 Among the builders, each to other calls
 Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,
 As mock'd they storm; great laughter was in heav'n,
 And looking down to see the hubbub strange 63

⁴² *mouth*] Type. i. 405. *Bentl. MS.* In this twelfth book, Bentley says, the editor has seldom mixed his pebbles among the author's diamonds.

⁴⁸ *mouth of hell*] Virg. Georg. iv. 487.

'Tænarias etiam fauces, alta ostia Ditis.' *Newton.*

⁶² *Obstruct*] Approach the clouds. *Bentl. MS.*

⁶⁰ *hubbub*] v. F. Queen. iii. x. 43.

'And shrieking *hubbubs* them approaching nere.'

Bowle.

And hear the din : thus was the building left
Ridiculous, and the work Confusion nam'd.

Whereto thus Adam fatherly displeas'd.

O execrable son ! so to aspire
Above his brethren, to himself assuming 65
Authority usurp'd, from God not given.
He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,
Dominion absolute ; that right we hold
By his donation ; but man over men
He made not lord ; such title to himself 70
Reserving, human left from human free.
But this usurper his encroachment proud
Stays not on man ; to God his tower intends
Siege and defiance. Wretched man ! what food
Will he convey up thither to sustain 75
Himself and his rash army, where thin air
Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,
And famish him of breath, if not of bread ?

To whom thus Michael. Justly thou abhorr'st
That son, who on the quiet state of men 80
Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue
Rational liberty ; yet know withal,
Since thy original lapse, true liberty
Is lost, which always with right reason dwells
Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being : 85
Reason in man obscur'd, or not obey'd,

⁶² *Rational*] National. *Bentl. MS.*

⁶³ *thy*] So in Milton's own edition. In Fenton's, Bentley's, and others, it is ' Since *by* original lapse.' *Newton.*

⁶⁵ *Twinn'd*] Some editions read 'twin'd.' *Newton.*

Immediately inordinate desires
 And upstart passions catch the government
 From reason, and to servitude reduce
 Man till then free. Therefore, since he permits 90
 Within himself unworthy powers to reign
 Over free reason, God in judgment just
 Subjects him from without to violent lords
 Who oft as undeservedly enthal
 His outward freedom. Tyranny must be, 95
 Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.
 Yet sometimes nations will decline so low
 From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,
 But justice, and some fatal curse annex'd,
 Deprives them of their outward liberty, 100
 Their inward lost: witness th' irreverent son
 Of him who built the ark, who for the shame
 Done to his father, heard this heavy curse,
 Servant of servants, on his vicious race.
 Thus will this latter, as the former world, 105
 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last,
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw
 His presence from among them, and avert
 His holy eyes; resolving from thenceforth
 To leave them to their own polluted ways; 110
 And one peculiar nation to select
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoc'd,
 A nation from one faithful man to spring:

¹⁰⁸ *this* So in Milton's own ed.; but in others, 'his heavy curse.' The corruption first occurs in Tonson's ed. 1711, and is followed by Tickell, Fenton, and Bentley.

Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,
Bred up in idol-worship ; O that men, 115
Canst thou believe ? should be so stupid grown,
While yet the patriarch liv'd, who scap'd the flood,
As to forsake the living God, and fall
To worship their own work in wood and stone
For gods ! yet him God the Most High vouchsafes
To call by vision from his father's house, 121
His kindred, and false gods, into a land
Which he will show him, and from him will raise
A mighty nation, and upon him shower
His benediction so, that in his seed 125
All nations shall be bless'd ; he straight obeys,
Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes.
I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith
He leaves his gods, his friends, and native soil
Ur of Chaldæa, passing now the ford 130
To Haran, after him a cumbrous train
Of herds, and flocks, and numerous servitude ;
Not wand'ring poor, but trusting all his wealth
With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.
Canaan he now attains ; I see his tents 135
Pitch'd about Sechem, and the neighbouring plain
Of Moreh ; there by promise he receives
Gift to his progeny of all that land ;
From Hamath northward to the desert south,
Things by their names I call, though yet unnam'd,
From Hermon east to the great western sea, 141
Mount Hermon, yonder sea, each place behold
In prospect, as I point them ; on the shore

Mount Carmel ; here the double-founted stream
 Jordan, true limit eastward ; but his sons 145
 Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of hills.
 This ponder, that all nations of the earth
 Shall in his seed be blessed ; by that seed
 Is meant thy great Deliverer, who shall bruise
 The serpent's head ; whereof to thee anon 150
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch bless'd,
 Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,
 A son, and of his son a grandchild, leaves,
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown.
 The grandchild with twelve sons increas'd departs
 From Canaan, to a land hereafter call'd 155
 Ægypt, divided by the river Nile ;
 See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouths
 Into the sea. To sojourn in that land
 He comes, invited by a younger son 160
 In time of dearth ; a son, whose worthy deeds
 Raise him to be the second in that realm
 Of Pharaoh : there he dies, and leaves his race
 Growing into a nation, and now grown
 Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks 165
 To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests
 Too numerous ; whence of guests he makes them
 Inhospitably, and kills their infant males : [slaves
 Till by two brethren, those two brethren call
 Moses and Aaron, sent from God to claim 170
 His people from enthralment, they return

¹⁵⁵ *increas'd*] A Latinism, as Plaut. Trucul. ii. vi. 34.

'Cumque es aucta liberis.'

Richardson.

With glory and spoil back to their promis'd land.
 But first the lawless tyrant, who denies
 To know their God, or message to regard,
 Must be compell'd by signs and judgments dire ;
 To blood unshed the rivers must be turn'd ; 177
 Frogs, lice, and flies, must all his palace fill
 With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the land ;
 His cattle must of rot and murrain die ;
 Botches and blains must all his flesh imboss, 180
 And all his people ; thunder mix'd with hail,
 Hail mix'd with fire, must rend th' Ægyptian sky,
 And wheel on th' earth, devouring where it rolls ;
 What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,
 A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down 185
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green :
 Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,
 Palpable darkness, and blot out three days ;
 Last with one midnight stroke all the first-born
 Of Ægypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds
 This river-dragon tam'd at length submits 190
 To let his sojourners depart, and oft
 Humbles his stubborn heart ; but still as ice

177 *fill*] Spoil. *Bentl. MS.*

180 *imboss*] Shakesp. *K. Lear*, act iv. sc. 11.

————— 'Thou art a boil,

A plague-sore, an *embossed* carbuncle.' *Todd.*

188 *Palpable*] 'O darkneess palpable.' Marston's *Sat. ii.*

191 *This river-dragon*] So in the first edition; in the second it is altered to 'The river-dragon.' *Pearce.*

More harden'd after thaw, till, in his rage
 Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea ¹⁹⁵
 Swallows him with his host, but them lets pass
 As on dry land between two crystal walls,
 Aw'd by the rod of Moses so to stand
 Divided, till his rescu'd gain their shore :
 Such wondrous power God to his saint will lend,
 Though present in his angel, who shall go ²⁰¹
 Before them in a cloud, and pillar of fire,
 By day a cloud, by night a pillar of fire,
 To guide them in their journey, and remove
 Behind them, while th' obdurate king pursues : ²⁰⁵
 All night he will pursue, but his approach
 Darkness defends between till morning watch ;
 Then through the fiery pillar and the cloud
 God looking forth will trouble all his host, ²⁰⁹
 And craze their chariot-wheels : when by command
 Moses once more his potent rod extends
 Over the sea ; the sea his rod obeys ;
 On their imbattled ranks the waves return,
 And overwhelm their war. The race elect
 Safe towards Canaan from the shore advance ²¹⁵
 Through the wild desert, not the readiest way,
 Lest ent'ring on the Canaanite alarm'd
 War terrify them inexpert, and fear

¹⁹⁷ *crystal walls*] In Sylvester's *Du Bartas*, p. 863, the Red Sea is described with 'walls of crystall.' *Todd.*

²⁰⁷ *defends*] i. e. forbids, keeps off: so b. xi. 86. 'That defended fruit;' and Spens. *F. Q.* iv. 8. 82.

'Himself to save and daunger to *defend*.' *Todd.*

Return them back to Ægypt, choosing rather
 Inglorious life with servitude ; for life 220
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet
 Untrain'd in arms, where rashness leads not on.
 This also shall they gain by their delay
 In the wide wilderness ; there they shall found
 Their government, and their great senate choose
 Through the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordain'd.
 God from the mount of Sinai, whose gray top
 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself
 In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets' sound
 Ordain them laws ; part, such as appertain 230
 To civil justice ; part, religious rites
 Of sacrifice, informing them by types
 And shadows of that destin'd seed to bruise
 The serpent, by what means he shall achieve
 Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God 235
 To mortal ear is dreadful : they beseech
 That Moses might report to them his will,
 And terror cease ; he grants what they besought,
 Instructed that to God is no access
 Without mediator, whose high office now 240
 Moses in figure bears, to introduce
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,
 And all the prophets in their age the times
 Of great Messiah shall sing. Thus laws and rites
 Establish'd, such delight hath God in men 245
 Obedient to his will, that he vouchsafes

238 *what they besought*] In the first edition, 'He grants them
 their desire.'
Newton.

Among them to set up his tabernacle,
The Holy One with mortal men to dwell.
By his prescript a sanctuary is fram'd
Of cedar, overlaid with gold, therein 250
An ark, and in the ark his testimony,
The records of his covenant; over these
A mercy-seat of gold between the wings
Of two bright cherubim; before him burn
Seven lamps, as in a zodiac representing 255
The heavenly fires; over the tent a cloud
Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night,
Save when they journey; and at length they come
Conducted by his angel to the land
Promis'd to Abraham and his seed. The rest 260
Were long to tell, how many battles fought,
How many kings destroy'd, and kingdoms won;
Or how the sun shall in mid heaven stand still
A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,
Man's voice commanding, 'Sun in Gibeon stand,
And thou moon in the vale of Ajalon, 265
Till Israel overcome;' so call the third
From Abraham, son of Isaac, and from him
His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win.

Here Adam interpos'd. O sent from heaven,
Enlight'ner of my darkness, gracious things 271
Thou hast reveal'd, those chiefly which concern
Just Abraham and his seed: now first I find
Mine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eas'd,
Erewhile perplex'd with thoughts what would be-
come

Of me and all mankind ; but now I see 276
 His day, in whom all nations shall be bless'd,
 Favour unmerited by me, who sought
 Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.
 This yet I apprehend not, why to those 280
 Among whom God will deign to dwell on earth
 So many and so various laws are given ;
 So many laws argue so many sins
 Among them ; how can God with such reside ?
 To whom thus Michael. Doubt not but that sin
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot ; 286
 And therefore was law given them to evince
 Their natural pravity, by stirring up
 Sin against law to fight ; that when they see
 Law can discover sin, but not remove, 290
 Save by those shadowy expiations weak,
 The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude
 Some blood more precious must be paid for man,
 Just for unjust, that in such righteousness
 To them by faith imputed they may find 296
 Justification towards God, and peace
 Of conscience, which the law by ceremonies
 Cannot appease, nor man the moral part
 Perform, and not performing cannot live.
 So law appears imperfect, and but given 300
 With purpose to resign them in full time
 Up to a better covenant, disciplin'd
 From shadowy types to truth, from flesh to spirit,
 From imposition of strict laws to free
 Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear 306

To filial, works of law to works of faith.
And therefore shall not Moses, though of God
Highly belov'd, being but the minister
Of law, his people into Canaan lead ;
But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call, 310
His name and office bearing, who shall quell
The adversary serpent, and bring back
Through the world's wilderness long wander'd man
Safe to eternal Paradise of rest. 314
Mean while they in their earthly Canaan plac'd
Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins
National interrupt their public peace,
Provoking God to raise them enemies,
From whom as oft he saves them penitent,
By judges first, then under kings ; of whom 320
The second, both for piety renown'd
And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive
Irrevocable, that his regal throne
For ever shall endure ; the like shall sing
All prophecy, that of the royal stock 325
Of David, so I name this king, shall rise
A son, the woman's seed to thee foretold,
Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust
All nations, and to kings foretold ; of kings
The last, for of his reign shall be no end. 330
But first a long succession must ensue,
And his next son, for wealth and wisdom fam'd,
The clouded ark of God, till then in tents
Wand'ring, shall in a glorious temple enshrine.
Such follow him, as shall be register'd 335

Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scroll ;
Whose foul idolatries, and other faults
Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense
God, as to leave them, and expose their land,
Their city, his temple, and his holy ark, 240
With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey
To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st
Left in confusion, Babylon thence call'd.
There in captivity he lets them dwell
The space of seventy years, then brings them back,
Rememb'ring mercy and his covenant sworn
To David stablish'd as the days of heaven.
Return'd from Babylon by leave of kings
Their lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God
They first re-edify, and for a while 260
In mean estate live moderate, till grown
In wealth and multitude, factious they grow :
But first among the priests dissension springs,
Men who attend the altar, and should most
Endeavour peace : their strife pollution brings 285
Upon the temple itself : at last they seize
The sceptre, and regard not David's sons ;
Then lose it to a stranger, that the true
Anointed king Messiah might be born
Barr'd of his right ; yet at his birth a star 300
Unseen before in heaven proclaims him come ;
And guides the eastern sages, who inquire
His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold :
His place of birth a solemn angel tells
To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night ; 305

They gladly thither haste, and by a choir
 Of squadron'd angels hear his carol sung.
 A Virgin is his mother, but his sire
 The power of the Most High; he shall ascend
 The throne hereditary, and bound his reign ³⁷⁰
 With earth's wide bounds, his glory with the heavens.

He ceas'd, discerning Adam with such joy
 Surcharg'd, as had like grief been dew'd in tears,
 Without the vent of words, which these he breath'd:

O prophet of glad tidings, finisher ³⁷⁵
 Of utmost hope! now clear I understand
 What oft my steadiest thoughts have search'd in
 Why our great expectation should be call'd [vain,
 The seed of woman: Virgin Mother, hail,
 High in the love of heaven, yet from my loins ³⁸⁰
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son
 Of God most high; so God with man unites.
 Needs must the serpent now his capital bruise
 Expect with mortal pain: say where and when
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel.

To whom thus Michael. Dream not of their fight,
 As of a duel, or the local wounds
 Of head or heel: not therefore joins the Son
 Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil
 Thy enemy; nor so is overcome ³⁸⁰
 Satan, whose fall from heaven, a deadlier bruise,
 Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound;
 Which he, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,

³⁷⁰ *bound*] Hume and Newton cite Virg. *Æn.* i. 287.

'Imperium Oceano, famam qui terminet astris.'

Upton refers to Psalm ii. 8. Isaiah ix. 7. Zechariah ix. 9.

Not by destroying Satan, but his works
 In thee and in thy seed: nor can this be, 395
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,
 Obedience to the law of God, impos'd
 On penalty of death, and suffering death,
 The penalty to thy transgression due,
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow:
 So only can high justice rest appaid. 401
 The law of God exact he shall fulfil,
 Both by obedience and by love, though love
 Alone fulfil the law; thy punishment
 He shall endure by coming in the flesh 405
 To a reproachful life and cursed death,
 Proclaiming life to all who shall believe
 In his redemption, and that his obedience
 Imputed becomes theirs by faith, his merits
 To save them, not their own, though legal, works.
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd, 411
 Seiz'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemn'd
 A shameful and accurs'd, nail'd to the cross

401 *appaid*] i. e. 'satisfied;' the language of Chaucer and Spenser. See Urry's Gloss. Chaucer. *Todd*.

409 *merits*] Pearce, Newton, and the other critics, acknowledge the difficulty of this passage. Mr. Todd speaks of an *ingenious* writer, who reads 'merit's,' with an elision. Bentley prefers 'Do save them,' which is justly objected to by Pearce. I propose to read

'———— and that his obedience
 Imputed, becomes theirs by faith; his merits
 So save them, not their own, though legal works.'

This reading appears to me to render the passage clear, without any further alteration of the text than the substitution of S for T.

By his own nation, slain for bringing life :
 But to the cross he nails thy enemies, 415
 The law that is against thee, and the sins
 Of all mankind, with him there crucify'd,
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust
 In this his satisfaction : so he dies,
 But soon revives ; Death over him no power 420
 Shall long usurp ; ere the third dawning light
 Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,
 Thy ransom paid, which man from death redeems,
 His death for man, as many as offer'd life 425
 Neglect not, and the benefit embrace
 By faith not void of works. This godlike act
 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have
 In sin for ever lost from life ; this act [dy'd,
 Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength,
 Defeating sin and death, his two main arms,
 And fix far deeper in his head their stings,
 Than temporal death shall bruise the victor's heel,
 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death, like sleep,
 A gentle wafting to immortal life. 435
 Nor after resurrection shall he stay
 Longer on earth than certain times to appear
 To his disciples, men who in his life
 Still follow'd him ; to them shall leave in charge

⁴²⁴ *Thy ransom*] The two first editions have 'Thy,' the later ones 'The.' *Pearce*.

⁴²⁴ *death, like sleep*] Fenton has printed 'death-like;' and Johnson has quoted this passage in his dictionary to illustrate 'death-like;' but Milton's editions do not authorize such a reading.

To teach all nations what of him they learn'd ⁴⁴⁰
 And his salvation ; them who shall believe
 Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to life
 Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,
 For death, like that which the Redeemer died. ⁴⁴⁵
 All nations they shall teach ; for from that day
 Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins
 Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the sons
 Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world :
 So in his seed all nations shall be bless'd. ⁴⁵⁰
 Then to the heaven of heavens he shall ascend
 With victory, triumphing through the air
 Over his foes and thine ; there shall surprise
 The serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains
 Through all his realm, and there confounded leave ;
 Then enter into glory, and resume
 His seat at God's right hand, exalted high
 Above all names in heaven ; and thence shall come,
 When this world's dissolution shall be ripe, ⁴⁵⁵
 With glory and power to judge both quick and dead ;
 To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward
 His faithful, and receive them into bliss,
 Whether in heaven or earth ; for then the earth
 Shall all be Paradise, far happier place
 Than this of Eden, and far happier days. ⁴⁶⁰

So spake th' archangel Michael, then paus'd,
 As at the world's great period ; and our sire

⁴⁵⁹ *this world's*] In the later editions we have '*the worlds*,'
 but the two first have '*this*.' *Pearce*.

⁴⁶¹ *judge*] *Damn. Benl. MS.*

Replete with joy and wonder thus reply'd.

O goodness infinite, goodness immense!

That all this good of evil shall produce, 470

And evil turn to good; more wonderful

Than that which by creation first brought forth

Light out of darkness! full of doubt I stand,

Whether I should repent me now of sin

By me done and occasion'd, or rejoice [spring.

Much more, that much more good thereof shall

To God more glory, more good will to men

From God, and over wrath grace shall abound.

But say, if our Deliverer up to heaven

Must reascend, what will betide the few 480

His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,

The enemies of truth? who then shall guide

His people, who defend? will they not deal

Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?

Be sure they will, said th' angel; but from heaven

He to his own a Comforter will send, 485

The promise of the Father, who shall dwell,

His Spirit, within them, and the law of faith

Working through love upon their hearts shall write,

To guide them in all truth, and also arm 490

With spiritual armour, able to resist

Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts,

What man can do against them, not afraid,

Though to the death; against such cruelties

With inward consolations recompens'd, 495

And oft supported so as shall amaze

471 And] Nay, even, yea, i. 387. *Bentl. MS.*

484 against] Amidst. *Bentl. MS.*

Their proudest persecutors : for the Spirit
 Pour'd first on his apostles, whom he sends
 To evangelize the nations, then on all
 Baptiz'd, shall them with wondrous gifts indue, 500
 To speak all tongues, and do all miracles,
 As did their Lord before them. Thus they win
 Great numbers of each nation to receive
 With joy the tidings brought from heaven : at length
 Their ministry perform'd, and race well run, 505
 Their doctrine and their story written left,
 They die ; but in their room, as they forewarn,
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,
 Who all the sacred mysteries of heaven
 To their own vile advantages shall turn 510
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth
 With superstitions and traditions taint,
 Left only in those written records pure,
 Though not but by the Spirit understood. 514
 Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,
 Places, and titles, and with these to join
 Secular power, though feigning still to act
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating
 The Spirit of God, promis'd alike and given
 To all believers ; and from that pretence 520
 Spiritual laws by carnal powers shall force
 On every conscience ; laws which none shall find
 Left them inroll'd, or what the Spirit within
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then

514 *Spirit*] I do not think that Milton, in all his writings,
 ever gave a stronger proof of his enthusiastical spirit than in
 this line. *Warburton*.

But force the Spirit of Grace itself, and bind 538
 His consort, Liberty? what, but unbuild
 His living temples, built by faith to stand,
 Their own faith, not another's? for on earth
 Who against faith and conscience can be heard
 Infallible? yet many will presume : 539
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise
 On all who in the worship persevere
 Of spirit and truth : the rest, far greater part,
 Will deem in outward rites and specious forms
 Religion satisfied ; truth shall retire 540
 Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith
 Rarely be found : so shall the world go on,
 To good malignant, to bad men benign,
 Under her own weight groaning till the day
 Appear of respiration to the just, 541
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
 Of him so lately promis'd to thy aid,
 The Woman's Seed, obscurely then foretold,
 Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord ;
 Last in the clouds from heaven to be reveal'd 542
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve
 Satan with his perverted world, then raise
 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,
 New heav'ns, new earth, ages of endless date

538 *Will deem*] In the second edition it was printed by mistake 'Well deem;' but this reading, absurd as it is, has been followed in all the editions, till Fenton's and Bentley's, except Tickell's.

542 *dissolve*] An expression borrowed from Scripture, 2 Pet. iii. 11. 'Seeing then that all these things shall be *dissolved*.'

Newton.

Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love,
To bring forth fruits joy and eternal bliss.

He ended ; and thus Adam last reply'd.
How soon hath thy prediction, Seer bless'd,
Measur'd this transient world, the race of time,
Till time stand fix'd ? beyond is all abyss, 555
Eternity, whose end no eye can reach :
Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,
Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill
Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain ;
Beyond which was my folly to aspire. 560
Henceforth I learn that to obey is best,
And love with fear the only God, to walk
As in his presence, ever to observe
His providence, and on him sole depend,
Merciful over all his works, with good 565
Still overcoming evil ; and by small
Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak
Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise
By simply meek ; that suffering for truth's sake
Is fortitude to highest victory, 570
And to the faithful, death the gate of life ;
Taught this by his example, whom I now
Acknowledge my Redeemer ever bless'd.

To whom thus also th' angel last reply'd. 574
This having learn'd, thou hast attain'd the sum
Of wisdom ; hope no higher, though all the stars
Thou knew'st by name, and all th' ethereal powers,
All secrets of the deep, all nature's works,
Or works of God in heaven, air, earth, or sea,
And all the riches of this world enjoy'dst, 580

And all the rule, one empire ; only add
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add faith,
 Add virtue, patience, temperance, add love,
 By name to come call'd charity, the soul
 Of all the rest ; then wilt thou not be loath 585
 To leave this paradise, but shalt possess
 A paradise within thee, happier far.
 Let us descend now therefore from this top
 Of speculation ; for the hour precise 590
 Exacts our parting hence ; and see the guards,
 By me encamp'd on yonder hill, expect
 Their motion, at whose front a flaming sword,
 In signal of remove, waves fiercely round ;
 We may no longer stay : go, waken Eve ;
 Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd 595
 Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd
 To meek submission : thou at season fit
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,
 Chiefly what may concern her faith to know,
 The great deliverance by her seed to come, 600
 (For by the woman's seed,) on all mankind :
 That ye may live, which will be many days,
 Both in one faith unanimous, though sad
 With cause for evils past ; yet much more cheer'd
 With meditation on the happy end. 605

He ended, and they both descend the hill ;
 Descended, Adam to the bower, where Eve
 Lay sleeping, ran before, but found her wak'd ;
 And thus with words not sad she him receiv'd.

589 *speculation*] So in Par. Reg. iv. 236.

'this *specular* mount.' *Richardson*.

Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I
know ; 610

For God is also in sleep, and dreams advise,
Which he hath sent propitious, some great good
Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress
Wearied I fell asleep : but now lead on ;
In me is no delay ; with thee to go 615

Is to stay here ; without thee here to stay
Is to go hence unwilling ; thou to me
Art all things under heaven, all places thou,
Who for my wilful crime art banish'd hence.

This further consolation yet secure 620
I carry hence ; though all by me is lost,
Such favour I unworthy am vouchsaf'd,
By me the promis'd Seed shall all restore.

So spake our mother Eve, and Adam heard
Well pleas'd, but answer'd not ; for now too nigh
Th' archangel stood, and from the other hill
To their fix'd station all in bright array
The cherubim descended ; on the ground
Gliding meteorous, as ev'ning-mist
Ris'n from a river o'er the marish glides, 630
And gathers round fast at the labourer's heel
Homeward returning. High in front advanc'd
The brandish'd sword of God before them blaz'd
Fierce as a comet ; which with torrid heat,

⁶¹⁵ *In me*] Virg. Eclog. iii. 52,

'In me mora non erit ulla.' *Newton.*

⁶³⁰ *glides*] See Dante *Il Purgat.* c. v. 37.

'Vapori accesi non vid' io sì tosto
Di prima notte mai fender sereno,
Nè, sol calando, nuvole d'Agosto.'

And vapour as the Libyan air adust, 635
 Began to parch that temperate clime: whereat
 In either hand th' hast'ning angel caught
 Our ling'ring parents, and to the eastern gate
 Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast
 To the subjected plain; then disappear'd. 640
 They looking back all th' eastern side beheld
 Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,
 Wav'd over by that flaming brand, the gate
 With dreadful faces throng'd and fiery arms:
 Some natural tears they dropp'd, but wip'd them
 soon; 645
 The world was all before them, where to choose
 Their place of rest, and Providence their guide.
 They, hand in hand, with wand'ring steps and slow,
 Through Eden took their solitary way.

635 *vapour*] Hor. Epod. iii. 15.

'Nec tantus unquam siderum insedit vapor
 Siticulosæ Apuliæ.' Richardson.

635 *air adust*] Tasso Gier. Lib. vii. 52.

Qual con le chiome sanguinose horrende
 Splendor cometa suol per l'aria adusta.' Bosle.

645 *brand*] Sword. Gen. i. 24. Blade, xi. 120. Bentl. MS.

640 *world*] Shakesp. Rich. II. act. i. sc. 3.

'—— all the world's my way.' Johnson.

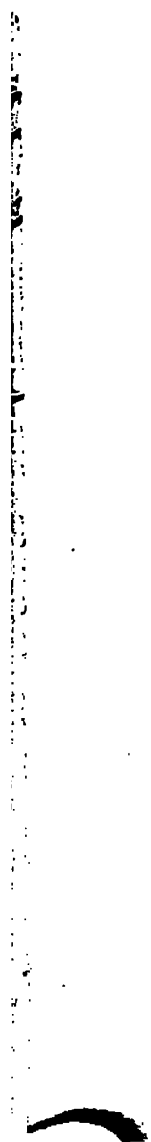
645 *hand*]

'A small but artful paradise they walk'd,
 And hand in hand sad gentle things they talk'd.'

See Cowley's Davideis, p. 20.

645 *wand'ring*] Wearied. Careful. Social. Bentl. MS.

PARADISE REGAINED.



PARADISE REGAINED.

BOOK I.

I, who ere-while the happy garden sung,
By one man's disobedience lost, now sing
Recover'd Paradise to all mankind,
By one man's firm obedience fully try'd
Through all temptation, and the tempter foil'd s
In all his wiles, defeated, and repuls'd,
And Eden rais'd in the waste wilderness.

Thou Spirit, who led'st this glorious Eremite
Into the desert, his victorious field, ·
Against the spiritual foe, and brought'st him thence
By proof the undoubted Son of God, inspire, u
As thou art wont, my prompted song, else mute,
And bear thro' height or depth of nature's bounds
With prosperous wing full summ'd to tell of deeds
Above heroic, though in secret done, 15
And unrecorded left through many an age,
Worthy t' have not remain'd so long unsung.

Now had the great Proclaimer, with a voice

⁷ *waste*] Spens. Fairy Queen, i. i. 32.

⁸ 'Far hence, quoth he, in *wasteful wilderness*.' *Dunster*.

¹⁴ *summ'd*] Drayton's Polyolbion. Song xi.

¹⁵ 'The muse from Cambria comes, with *pinions summ'd* and
sound.' *Todd*.

More awful than the sound of trumpet, cry'd
 Repentance, and heaven's kingdom nigh at hand
 To all baptiz'd: to his great baptism flock'd
 With awe the regions round, and with them came
 From Nazareth the Son of Joseph deem'd,
 To the flood Jordan; came, as then obscure,
 Unmark't, unknown; but him the Baptist soon ²⁵
 Descry'd, divinely warn'd, and witness bore
 As to his worthier, and would have resign'd
 To him his heavenly office; nor was long
 His witness unconfirm'd: on him baptiz'd
 Heaven open'd, and in likeness of a dove ³⁰
 The Spirit descended, while the Father's voice
 From heaven pronounc'd him his beloved Son.
 That heard the adversary, who, roving still
 About the world, at that assembly fam'd
 Would not be last, and, with the voice divine ³⁵
 Nigh thunder-struck, th' exalted man, to whom
 Such high attest was giv'n, a while survey'd
 With wonder; then, with envy fraught and rage,
 Flies to his place, nor rests, but in mid air
 To council summons all his mighty peers, ⁴⁰
 Within thick clouds and dark ten-fold involv'd,
 A gloomy consistory; and them amidst
 With looks aghast and sad he thus bespake.

⁴² *consistory*] Virg. *Æn.* iii. 679.

'Concellium horrendum.'

Thyer.

⁴² *gloomy consistory*] See Dante, *Il Paradiso*, *xxix.* 67.

'Omai dintorno a questo consistorio
 Puoi contemplare assai.'

O ancient Powers of air and this wide world,
 For much more willingly I mention air, 45
 This our old conquest, than remember hell,
 Our hated habitation ; well ye know
 How many ages, as the years of men,
 This universe we have possest, and rul'd
 In manner at our will th' affairs of earth, 50
 Since Adam and his facile consort Eve
 Lost Paradise deceiv'd by me, though since
 With dread attending when that fatal wound
 Shall be inflicted by the seed of Eve
 Upon my head ; long the decrees of heaven 55
 Delay, for longest time to him is short ;
 And now too soon for us the circling hours
 This dreaded time have compast, wherein we
 Must bide the stroke of that long threaten'd wound,
 At least if so we can, and by the head 60
 Broken be not intended all our power
 To be infring'd, our freedom, and our being,
 In this fair empire won of earth and air :
 For this ill news I bring, the Woman's Seed,
 Destin'd to this, is late of woman born ; 65
 His birth to our just fear gave no small cause,
 But his growth now to youth's full flow'r, displaying
 All virtue, grace, and wisdom to achieve

57 *circling*] So P. L. vi. 3. vii. 842, 'Circling years.'
Dumster.

67 *youth's full flow'r*] Hom. II. xiii. 484, ἡβηης ἀνδρος.
 Lucret. i. 564, ævi contingere florem. iii. 768, ætatis tangere
 florem. Sil. Ital. xvi. 406, primævæ flore juventæ.

Things highest, greatest, multiplies my fear.
 Before him a great prophet to proclaim 70
 His coming is sent harbinger, who all
 Invites, and in the consecrated stream
 Pretends to wash off sin, and fit them so
 Purify'd to receive him pure, or rather
 To do him honour as their king: all come, 75
 And he himself among them was baptiz'd,
 Not thence to be more pure, but to receive
 The testimony of heaven, that who he is
 Thenceforth the nations may not doubt. I saw
 The prophet do him reverence; on him rising 80
 Out of the water, heaven above the clouds
 Unfold her crystal doors, thence on his head
 A perfect dove descend, whate'er it meant,
 And out of heav'n the sovereign voice I heard,
 'This is my Son belov'd, in him am pleas'd.' 85
 His mother then is mortal, but his sire
 He who obtains the monarchy of heaven;
 And what will he not do to advance his Son?
 His first-begot we know, and sore have felt,
 When his fierce thunder drove us to the deep; 90
 Who this is we must learn, for man he seems
 In all his lineaments, though in his face

82 *crystal*] 'Crystal' was a favourite expression among our elder poets for 'bright.' It occurs nearly twenty times in Milton. It is often used, when no allusion to 'crystal' as a substance is meant, as in Shakesp. Hen. VI. p. i. act i. sc. 1: 'Brandish your *crystal tresses* in the sky.' Dekker's *Satiromastix*, Sig. K. 4, ed. 1602, 'Bow their *crystal* knees.'

The glimpses of his father's glory shine.
 Ye see our danger on the utmost edge
 Of hazard, which admits no long debate, 96
 But must with something sudden be oppos'd,
 Not force, but well-couch'd fraud, well-woven
 Ere in the head of nations he appear [snares,
 Their king, their leader, and supreme on earth.
 I, when no other durst, sole undertook 100
 The dismal expedition to find out
 And ruin Adam, and the exploit perform'd
 Successfully; a calmer voyage now
 Will waft me; and the way found prosp'rous once
 Induces best to hope of like success. 105

He ended, and his words impression left
 Of much amazement to th' infernal crew,
 Distracted and surpriz'd with deep dismay
 At these sad tidings; but no time was then
 For long indulgence to their fears or grief. 110
 Unanimous they all commit the care
 And management of this main enterprize
 To him their great dictator, whose attempt
 At first against mankind so well had thriv'd

94 *edge*] Shakesp. All's Well, &c. Act. iiii. sc. 8.

'We'll strive to bear it for your worthy sake
 To the extreme edge of hazard.' *Newton.*

97 *well-woven*] Sil. Ital. iiii. 238.

'Docilis fallendæ et neclere tectos
 Arte dolos.' *Dunster.*

104 *waft*] P. L. ii. 1041.

'Now with ease,
 Wafts on the calmer wave.' *Dunster.*

In Adam's overthrow, and led their march 115
 From hell's deep-vaulted den to dwell in light,
 Regents, and potentates, and kings, yea gods
 Of many a pleasant realm and province wide.
 So to the coast of Jordan he directs
 His easy steps, girded with snaky wiles, 120
 Where he might likeliest find this new-declar'd,
 This man of men, attested Son of God,
 Temptation and all guile on him to try;
 So to subvert whom he suspected rais'd
 To end his reign on earth so long enjoy'd: 125
 But contrary unweeting he fulfill'd
 The purpos'd counsel pre-ordain'd and fixt
 Of the Most High, who, in full frequency bright
 Of angels, thus to Gabriel smiling spake.

Gabriel, this day by proof thou shalt behold, 130
 Thou and all angels conversant on earth
 With man or men's affairs, how I begin
 To verify that solemn message late,
 On which I sent thee to the virgin pure
 In Galilee, that she should bear a son 135
 Great in renown, and call'd the Son of God;
 Then told'st her doubting how these things could be
 To her a virgin, that on her should come
 The Holy Ghost, and the Power of the Highest
 O'er-shadow her: this man born, and now up-grown,
 To show him worthy of his birth divine
 And high prediction, henceforth I expose

¹²⁷ *told'st*] The sense '*Thou* told'st her.' The language
 obscure, from being comprest and latinised, 'dixisti.'

Dumeter.

To Satan ; let him tempt and now assay
 His utmost subtlety, because he boasts
 And vaunts of his great cunning to the throng 145
 Of his apostasy ; he might have learnt
 Less overweening, since he fail'd in Job,
 Whose constant perseverance overcame
 Whate'er his cruel malice could invent.
 He now shall know I can produce a man 150
 Of female seed, far abler to resist
 All his solicitations, and at length
 All his vast force, and drive him back to hell,
 Winning by conquest what the first man lost
 By fallacy surpris'd. But first I mean 155
 To exercise him in the wilderness ;
 There he shall first lay down the rudiments
 Of his great warfare, ere I send him forth
 To conquer sin and death, the two grand foes,
 By humiliation and strong sufferance. 160
 His weakness shall o'ercome satanic strength,
 And all the world, and mass of sinful flesh ;
 That all the angels and æthereal powers,
 They now, and men hereafter, may discern,
 From what consummate virtue I have chose 165
 This perfect man, by merit call'd my Son,
 To earn salvation for the sons of men.

So spake th' eternal Father, and all heaven
 Admiring stood a space, then into hymns
 Burst forth, and in celestial measures mov'd, 170

157 *rudimenta.*] Virg. *Æn.* xi. 156.

' *Bellique* propinqui

Dura rudimenta.'

Dumetor.

Circling the throne and singing, while the hand
Sung with the voice, and this the argument.

Victory and triumph to the Son of God,
Now ent'ring his great duel, not of arms,
But to vanquish by wisdom hellish wiles. 175
The Father knows the Son; therefore secure
Ventures his filial virtue, though untry'd,
Against whate'er may tempt, whate'er seduce,
Allure, or terrify, or undermine.
Be frustrate all ye stratagems of hell, 180
And devilish machinations come to nought!

So they in heaven their odes and vigils tun'd:
Mean while the Son of God, who yet some days
Lodg'd in Bethabara where John baptiz'd,
Musing and much revolving in his breast, 185
How best the mighty work he might begin
Of Saviour to mankind, and which way first
Publish his god-like office now mature,
One day forth walk'd alone, the Spirit leading,
And his deep thoughts, the better to converse 190
With solitude, till far from track of men,
Thought following thought, and step by step led on,
He enter'd now the bordering desert wild,
And, with dark shades and rocks environ'd round,
His holy meditations thus pursu'd. 195

171 *hand sung*] Tibull. El. iii. 4. 41.

'*Digiti cum voce locuti.*' *Calton.*

175 *vanquish*] Accent on the last syllable, so Shakesp.
Hen. VI. Part 1. act iii. sc. 3.

I am vanquish'd. These haughty words of hers, &c. *Todd.*

185 *revolving*] Virg. *Æn.* x. 890.

'*Multa movens animo.*'

Dunster.

O what a multitude of thoughts at once
 Awaken'd in me swarm, while I consider
 What from within I feel myself, and hear
 What from without comes often to my ears,
 Ill sorting with my present state compar'd ! 200
 When I was yet a child, no childish play
 To me was pleasing; all my mind was set
 Serious to learn and know, and thence to do
 What might be public good ; myself I thought
 Born to that end, born to promote all truth, 205
 All righteous things : therefore, above my years,
 The law of God I read, and found it sweet,
 Made it my whole delight, and in it grew
 To such perfection, that, ere yet my age
 Had measur'd twice six years, at our great feast
 I went into the temple, there to hear
 The teachers of our law, and to propose
 What might improve my knowledge or their own,
 And was admir'd by all ; yet this not all
 To which my spirit aspir'd, victorious deeds 210
 Flam'd in my heart, heroic acts, one while
 To rescue Israel from the Roman yoke,
 Then to subdue and quell o'er all the earth
 Brute violence and proud tyrannic pow'r,
 Till truth were freed, and equity restor'd : 220
 Yet held it more humane, more heav'nly, first
 By winning words to conquer willing hearts,
 And make persuasion do the work of fear ;

222 *willing*] Virg. Georg. iv. 561.

' *Victorque volentes*

Per populos dat jura.'

Jordan.

At least to try, and teach the erring soul,
 Not wilfully misdoing, but unaware 225
 Misled ; the stubborn only to subdue.
 These growing thoughts my mother soon perceiving
 By words at times cast forth, inly rejoic'd,
 And said to me apart ; High are thy thoughts
 O son, but nourish them, and let them soar 230
 To what height sacred virtue and true worth
 Can raise them, though above example high ;
 By matchless deeds express thy matchless Sire.
 For know, thou art no son of mortal man,
 Though men esteem thee low of parentage, 235
 Thy father is the eternal King who rules
 All heaven and earth, angels and sons of men :
 A messenger from God foretold thy birth
 Conceiv'd in me a virgin ; he foretold
 Thou shouldst be great, and sit on David's throne,
 And of thy kingdom there should be no end. 241
 At thy nativity a glorious quire
 Of angels in the fields of Bethlehem sung
 To shepherds watching at their folds by night,
 And told them the Messiah now was born, 245
 Where they might see him ; and to thee they came,
 Directed to the manger where thou lay'st,
 For in the inn was left no better room.

²²⁵ *subdue* | All the editions, except Tonson's, 1747, read 'destroy ;' but in the errata of the first edition, the reader is desired to read 'subdue.' *Newton*.

²³⁸ *express* | So P. L. viii. 440.

'Expressing well the Spirit within thee free.' *Dumast*.

²⁴¹ *should* | Tickell and Fenton, after Tonson, read 'shall.'
Newton restored the right reading. *Todd*.

A star, not seen before, in heaven appearing
 Guided the wise men thither from the east, ²⁵⁰
 To honour thee with incense, myrrh, and gold,
 By whose bright course led on they found the place,
 Affirming it thy star new grav'n in heaven,
 By which they knew the king of Israel born.
 Just Simeon and prophetic Anna, warn'd ²⁵⁵
 By vision, found thee in the temple, and spake,
 Before the altar and the vested priest,
 Like things of thee to all that present stood.
 This having heard, straight I again resolv'd
 The law and prophets, searching what was writ
 Concerning the Messiah, to our scribes ²⁶¹
 Known partly, and soon found of whom they spake
 I am; this chiefly, that my way must lie
 Through many a hard assay, even to the death,
 Ere I the promis'd kingdom can attain, ²⁶⁵
 Or work redemption for mankind, whose sins'
 Full weight must be transferr'd upon my head.
 Yet, neither thus dishearten'd or dismay'd,
 The time prefixt I waited, when, behold!
 The Baptist, of whose birth I oft had heard, ²⁷⁰
 Not knew by sight, now come, who was to come
 Before Messiah and his way prepare.
 I, as all others, to his baptism came,
 Which I believ'd was from above; but he

²⁵⁷ *vested*] Virg. *Æn.* xii. 169. 'Purâque in veste sacerdos.'

Dunster.

²⁷¹ *knew*] Hence all the pictures of Raphael and the great Italian painters, representing the *infant Jesus and John*, are historically false.

Straight knew me, and with loudest voice proclaim'd
 Me him, for it was shown him so from heaven, 278
 Me him whose harbinger he was ; and first
 Refus'd on me his baptism to confer,
 As much his greater, and was hardly won :
 But as I rose out of the laving stream, 280
 Heaven open'd her eternal doors, from whence
 The Spirit descended on me like a dove ;
 And last, the sum of all, my Father's voice,
 Audibly heard from heaven, pronounc'd me his,
 Me his beloved Son, in whom alone 285
 He was well pleas'd ; by which I knew the time
 Now full, that I no more should live obscure,
 But openly begin, as best becomes
 The authority which I deriv'd from heaven.
 And now by some strong motion I am led 290
 Into this wilderness, to what intent
 I learn not yet, perhaps I need not know ;
 For what concerns my knowledge God reveals.
 So spake our Morning Star, then in his rise,
 And looking round on every side beheld 295
 A pathless desert, dusk with horrid shades ;
 The way he came not having mark'd, return
 Was difficult, by human steps untrod ;
 And he still on was led, but with such thoughts
 Accompanied of things past and to come 300
 Lodg'd in his breast, as well might recommend
 Such solitude before choicest society.
 Full forty days he pass'd, whether on hill

296 *dusk*] Virg. *Æn.* i. 165.

'*Horrentique atrum nemus imminet umbra.*' *Dunster.*

Sometimes, anon in shady vale, each night
 Under the covert of some ancient oak 305
 Or cedar, to defend him from the dew,
 Or harbour'd in one cave, is not reveal'd;
 Nor tasted human food, nor hunger felt
 Till those days ended, hunger'd then at last
 Among wild beasts: they at his sight grew mild, 310
 Nor sleeping him nor waking harm'd; his walk
 The fiery serpent fled and noxious worm,
 The lion and fierce tiger glar'd aloof.
 But now an aged man in rural weeds, 314
 Following, as seem'd, the quest of some stray ewe,
 Or wither'd sticks to gather, which might serve
 Against a winter's day, when winds blow keen,
 To warm him wet return'd from field at eve,

³¹⁰ *beasts*] Giles Fletcher, in his *Christ's Victorie and Triumph*, ed. 1632, p. 27, says that when the beasts, in the wilderness,

'saw their Lord's bright cognizance
 Shine in his face, soon did they disadvance,
 And some unto him kneel, and some about him dance.'

A. Dyce.

³¹² *glar'd*] Jul. Cæs. act i. iv. 'I met a *Lion*
 Who *glar'd* upon me, and *went surly by*.' *Dunster*

³¹⁴ *weeds*] Spens. F. Q. i. i. 29.

'An *aged man* in long black *weeds* yclad.' *Dunster*.

Compare Giles Fletcher's *Christ's Victorie and Triumph*, ed. 1632, p. 30. 32:

'At length an *aged syre* farre off he saw
 Come slowly footing
 Thus on they wandred, but those holy *weeds*
 A monstrous serpent, and no man did cover.'

In Bale's *Christ's Temptation*, 1538, Satan joins our Saviour in the disguise of a hermit. A. Dyce.

He saw approach, who first with curious eye 318
Perus'd him, then with words thus utter'd spake.

Sir, what ill chance hath brought thee to this place
So far from path or road of men, who pass
In troop or caravan? for single none
Durst ever, who return'd, and dropt not here
His carcass, pin'd with hunger and with drought.
I ask the rather, and the more admire, 326
For that to me thou seem'st the man, whom late
Our new baptizing prophet at the ford
Of Jordan honour'd so, and call'd thee Son
Of God; I saw and heard, for we sometimes, 330
Who dwell this wild, constrain'd by want, come
To town or village nigh, nighest is far, [forth
Where aught we hear, and curious are to hear,
What happens new; fame also finds us out.

To whom the Son of God. Who brought me hither
Will bring me hence; no other guide I seek. 336

By miracle he may, reply'd the swain,
What other way I see not, for we here
Live on tough roots and stubs, to thirst inur'd
More than the camel, and to drink go far, 340
Men to much misery and hardship born.
But if thou be the Son of God, command
That out of these hard stones be made thee bread.
So shalt thou save thyself and us relieve
With food, whereof we wretched seldom taste.

320 *Perus'd*] P L. viii. 267. 'Myself I then perus'd;'
and Hamlet (act ii. sc. 1.), 'He falls to such *perusal* of my
face.' *Dunster*.

339 *stubs*] Thyer proposes 'shrubs,' very improperly.

He ended, and the Son of God reply'd.
 Think'st thou such force in bread? is it not written,
 For I discern thee other than thou seem'st,
 Man lives not by bread only, but each word
 Proceeding from the mouth of God, who fed 350
 Our fathers here with manna? in the mount
 Moses was forty days, nor eat, nor drank;
 And forty days Elijah without food
 Wander'd this barren waste, the same I now.
 Why dost thou then suggest to me distrust, 365
 Knowing who I am, as I know who thou art?

Whom thus answer'd th' arch fiend now undis-
 'Tis true, I am that spirit unfortunate, [guis'd.
 Who, leagu'd with millions more in rash revolt,
 Kept not my happy station, but was driven 360
 With them from bliss to the bottomless deep;
 Yet to that hideous place not so confin'd
 By rigour unconniving, but that oft,
 Leaving my dolorous prison, I enjoy
 Large liberty, to round this globe of earth, 365
 Or range in th' air, nor from the heaven of heavens
 Hath he excluded my resort sometimes.
 I came among the sons of God, when he
 Gave up into my hands Uzzean Job
 To prove him, and illustrate his high worth; 370
 And when to all his angels he propos'd
 To draw the proud king Ahab into fraud,
 That he might fall in Ramoth, they demurring,
 I undertook that office, and the tongues
 Of all his flattering prophets glibb'd with lies 375

To his destruction, as I had in charge ;
 For what he bids I do. Though I have lost
 Much lustre of my native brightness, lost
 To be belov'd of God, I have not lost
 To love, at least contemplate and admire, 300
 What I see excellent in good, or fair,
 Or virtuous ; I should so have lost all sense.
 What can be then less in me than desire
 To see thee and approach thee, whom I know
 Declar'd the Son of God, to hear attent 305
 Thy wisdom, and behold thy godlike deeds ?
 Men generally think me much a foe
 To all mankind : why should I ? they to me
 Never did wrong or violence ; by them
 I lost not what I lost, rather by them 310
 I gain'd what I have gain'd, and with them dwell,
 Copartner in these regions of the world,
 If not disposer ; lend them oft my aid,
 Oft my advice by presages, and signs,
 And answers, oracles, portents, and dreams, 315
 Whereby they may direct their future life.
 Envy they say excites me thus to gain
 Companions of my misery and woe.
 At first it may be ; but long since with woe
 Nearer acquainted, now I feel by proof, 400

305 *attent*] Fair. Q. vi. 9. 26.

'Hung still upon his melting mouth *attent*,'
 and Hamlet, act i. sc. ii. 'With an *attent* ear.' *Thyer. Dunster.*

400 *Nearer*] 'Never' in Milton's ed. but the errata give
 'nearer.' Several editions retain the error. *Todd.*

That fellowship in pain divides not smart,
 Nor lightens aught each man's peculiar load.
 Small consolation then, were man adjoin'd :
 This wounds me most, what can it less ? that man,
 Man fall'n shall be restor'd, I never more. 405

To whom our Saviour sternly thus reply'd.
 Deservedly thou griev'st, compos'd of lies
 From the beginning, and in lies wilt end,
 Who boast release from hell, and leave to come
 Into the heaven of heavens. Thou com'st indeed,
 As a poor miserable captive thrall
 Comes to the place where he before had sat
 Among the prime in splendour, now depos'd,
 Ejected, emptied, gaz'd, unpitied, shunn'd,
 A spectacle of ruin or of scorn 415
 To all the host of heaven. The happy place
 Imparts to thee no happiness, no joy,
 Rather inflames thy torment, representing
 Lost bliss to thee no more communicable,
 So never more in hell than when in heaven. 420
 But thou art serviceable to heaven's King.
 Wilt thou impute t' obedience what thy fear

⁴⁰¹ *fellowship*] See Shakespeare's *Rape of Lucrece*. Aldine Poets, vol. xx. p. 128.

'It easeth some, though none it ever cur'd,
 To think, their dolour others have endur'd.'

⁴¹¹ *thrall*] See Heywood's *Hierarchie*, p. 564.

'The power of women to make others *thrall*.'
 and H. More's *Poems*, p. 251.

'Yet wote I not what may these wretched *thralls* relieve.'

Extorts, or pleasure to do ill excites ?
 What but thy malice mov'd thee to misdeem
 Of righteous Job, then cruelly to afflict him 428
 With all inflictions ? but his patience won.
 The other service was thy chosen task,
 To be a liar in four hundred mouths ;
 For lying is thy sustenance, thy food.
 Yet thou pretend'st to truth ; all oracles 430
 By thee are giv'n, and what confest more true
 Among the nations ? that hath been thy craft,
 By mixing somewhat true to vent more lies.
 But what have been thy answers ? what but dark,
 Ambiguous, and with double sense deluding, 435
 Which they who ask'd have seldom understood,
 And not well understood as good not known ?
 Who ever by consulting at thy shrine
 Return'd the wiser, or the more instruct
 To fly or follow what concern'd him most, 440
 And run not sooner to his fatal snare ?
 For God hath justly given the nations up
 To thy delusions ; justly, since they fell
 Idolatrous. But when his purpose is
 Among them to declare his providence 445
 To thee not known, whence hast thou then thy
 truth,
 But from him or his angels president
 In ev'ry province ? who, themselves disdaining
 T' approach thy temples, give thee in command

428 *won*] Verb neuter, so Spens. F. Q. i. vi. 89:

'And he the stoutest knight that ever *won*.' *Newton*.

What to the smallest tittle thou shalt say 450
 To thy adorers ; thou with trembling fear,
 Or like a fawning parasite, obey'st ;
 Then to thy self ascrib'st the truth foretold.
 But this thy glory shall be soon retrench'd ;
 No more shalt thou by oracling abuse 455
 The Gentiles ; henceforth oracles are ceas'd,
 And thou no more with pomp and sacrifice
 Shalt be inquir'd at Delphos or elsewhere,
 At least in vain, for they shall find thee mute.
 God hath now sent his living oracle 460
 Into the world to teach his final will,
 And sends his Spirit of Truth henceforth to dwell
 In pious hearts, an inward oracle
 To all truth requisite for men to know.

So spake our Saviour ; but the subtle fiend, 465
 Though inly stung with anger and disdain,
 Dissembled, and this answer smooth return'd.

Sharply thou hast insisted on rebuke,
 And urg'd me hard with doings, which not will,
 But misery, hath wrested from me ; where 470
 Easily canst thou find one miserable,
 And not enforc'd oftentimes to part from truth,
 If it may stand him more in stead to lie,
 Say and unsay, feign, flatter, or abjure ?
 But thou art plac'd above me, thou art Lord ; 475
 From thee I can, and must, submit endure
 Check or reproof, and glad to escape so quit.

456 *ceas'd*] Juv. Sat. vi. 554.

'Delphis oracula cessant.' *Dunster*.

Hard are the ways of truth, and rough to walk,
 Smooth on the tongue discours'd, pleasing to th' ear,
 And tuneable as sylvan pipe or song; 480
 What wonder then if I delight to hear
 Her dictates from thy mouth? most men admire
 Virtue, who follow not her lore: permit me
 To hear thee when I come, since no man comes,
 And talk at least, though I despair to attain. 485
 Thy Father, who is holy, wise, and pure,
 Suffers the hypocrite or atheous priest
 To tread his sacred courts, and minister
 About his altar, handling holy things,
 Praying or vowing, and vouchsaf'd his voice 490
 To Balaam reprobate, a prophet yet
 Inspir'd; disdain not such access to me.

To whom our Saviour with unalter'd brow.
 Thy coming hither, though I know thy scope,
 I bid not or forbid: do as thou find'st 495
 Permission from above; thou canst not more.

He added not; and Satan, bowing low
 His gray dissimulation, disappear'd

478 *Hard*] Sil. Ital. iv. 605.

'——— *perque aspera duro*

Nititur ad laudem virtus interrita clivo. *Dunster.*

487 *atheous*] Cicero, speaking of Diagoras, 'Atheos qui dictus est.' De Nat. D. i. 28. 'Atheal' is not uncommon in old English. *Dunster. Todd.*

496 *gray dissimulation*] See Ford's Broken Heart; ed. Weber, p. 304.

'Lay by thy whining gray dissimulation.'

Into thin air diffus'd : for now began
 Night with her sullen wings to double-shade ⁵⁰⁰
 The desert ; fowls in their clay nests were couch'd ;
 And now wild beasts came forth the woods to roam.

⁴⁹⁹ *thin*] Virg. *Æn.* iv. 278.

'Et procul in *temem* ex oculis *evanuit auram.*'

Shakesp. Temp. act iv. sc. 2.

'Are melted into air, into *thin air.*' *Dunster.*

⁵⁰⁰ *Night*] Nonnus ends the xxvth book of his Dionysiaca thus,

Καὶ σκιερὴν ἐμέλαινε δλην χθόνα σιγαλή νύξ·

Δαοὶ δ' ἐνθα καὶ ἐνθα χαμαιστρώτων ἐπὶ λέκτρων

Ἑσπερίη μετὰ δόρπον ὀρεϊάδι κάππεσον εὐνῇ.

⁵⁰⁰ *double-shade*] Ov. Met. xi. 550.

'Duplicataque noctis imago est.' *Dunster.*

⁵⁰¹ *fowls*] Beaumont's *Psyche*, c. xiii. st. 855, ed. 1648.

'Each gentle fair-condition'd bird and beast

Hied them unto their nests and dens . . .

Only some ominous ravens, and screech owles preest

With beasts of prey and night, thro' the black air.'

PARADISE REGAINED.

BOOK II.

MEANWHILE the new-baptiz'd, who yet remain'd
 At Jordan with the Baptist, and had seen
 Him whom they heard so late expressly call'd
 Jesus, Messiah, Son of God declar'd,
 And on that high authority had believ'd, 5
 And with him talk'd, and with him lodg'd—I mean
 Andrew and Simon, famous after known,
 With others though in holy writ not nam'd—
 Now missing him their joy so lately found,
 So lately found, and so abruptly gone, 10
 Began to doubt, and doubted many days,
 And, as the days increas'd, increas'd their doubt:
 Sometimes they thought he might be only shown,
 And for a time caught up to GÓD, as once
 Moses was in the Mount, and missing long; 15
 And the great Thisbite, who on fiery wheels
 Rode up to heaven, yet once again to come.
 Therefore as those young prophets then with care

⁶ *mean*] See this expression in Harington's *Ariosto*, xxxi.

46. 'I mean Renaldo's House of Montalbano;' and st. 55.

'I mean the cruel Pagan Rodomont.' *Newton*.

¹⁸ *shown*] *Virg. Æn. vi. 869.*

'Ostendent teris hunc tantum fata.'

Sought lost Elijah, so in each place these
 Nigh to Bethabara ; in Jericho 20
 The city of palms, Ænon, and Salem old,
 Machærus, and each town or city wall'd
 On this side the broad lake Genezaret,
 Or in Peræa ; but return'd in vain.
 Then on the bank of Jordan, by a creek, 25
 Where winds with reeds and osiers whisp'ring play,
 Plain fishermen, no greater men them call,
 Close in a cottage low together got,
 Their unexpected loss and complaints out breath'd.
 Alas, from what high hope to what relapse 30
 Unlook'd for are we fallen ! our eyes beheld
 Messiah certainly now come, so long
 Expected of our fathers ; we have heard
 His words, his wisdom full of grace and truth :
 Now, now, for sure, deliverance is at hand, 35
 The kingdom shall to Israel be restor'd :
 Thus we rejoic'd, but soon our joy is turn'd
 Into perplexity and new amaze :

²³ *broad*] 'Broad' is not opposed to *long*, but means 'large;' in this sense it is often used by the old English poets, and thus their modern imitator, 'He knew her of *broad lands* the heir.' *Marmion*, c. ii. st. xxvii. The lake of Genezaret is eighteen miles long, and only five broad.

²⁵ *Jordan*] Giles Fletcher's *Christ's Victorie and Triumph* ad. 1632, p. 49:

'Or whistling reeds, that ruddy Jordan laves.' *A. Dyce*.

²⁷ *no greater*] Spenser in the beginning of *Sheph. Cal*.

'A shepherd's boy, *no better do him call*.' *Newton*.

³⁰ *what*] So first edition, in most others, *that*.' *Newton*.

For whither is he gone ; what accident
Hath rapt him from us ? will he now retire 4
After appearance, and again prolong
Our expectation ? God of Israel,
Send thy Messiah forth, the time is come ;
Behold the kings of the earth, how they oppress
Thy chosen, to what height their power unjust 45
They have exalted, and behind them cast
All fear of thee. Arise and vindicate
Thy glory, free thy people from their yoke.
But let us wait ; thus far he hath perform'd,
Sent his Anointed, and to us reveal'd him, 50
By his great prophet, pointed at and shown
In public, and with him we have convers'd ;
Let us be glad of this, and all our fears
Lay on his providence ; he will not fail,
Nor will withdraw him now, nor will recall, 55
Mock us with his blest sight, then snatch him
hence ;

Soon we shall see our hope, our joy return.

Thus they out of their complaints new hope resume
To find whom at the first they found unsought :
But to his mother Mary, when she saw 60
Others return'd from baptism, not her Son,
Nor left at Jordan, tidings of him none,
Within her breast though calm, her breast though
pure,
Motherly cares and fears got head, and rais'd
Some troubled thoughts, which she in sighs thus
clad.

O what avails me now that honour high 60
To have conceiv'd of God, or that salute,
'Hail, highly favour'd, among women blest !'
While I to sorrows am no less advanc'd,
And fears as eminent, above the lot 70
Of other women, by the birth I bore,
In such a season born, when scarce a shed
Could be obtain'd to shelter him or me
From the bleak air ! a stable was our warmth,
A manger his : yet soon enforc'd to fly 75
Thence into Egypt, till the murd'rous king
Were dead, who sought his life, and missing fill'd
With infant blood the streets of Bethlehem ;
From Egypt home return'd, in Nazareth
Hath been our dwelling many years ; his life 80
Private, unactive, calm, contemplative,
Little suspicious to any king ; but now
Full grown to man, acknowledg'd, as I hear,
By John the Baptist, and in public shown,
Son own'd from heaven by his Father's voice ; 85
I look'd for some great change : to honour ? no,
But trouble, as old Simeon plain foretold,
That to the fall and rising he should be
Of many in Israel, and to a sign
Spoken against, that through my very soul 90
A sword shall pierce. This is my favour'd lot,
My exaltation to afflictions high ;
Afflicted I may be, it seems, and blest ;
I will not argue that, nor will repine.
But where delays he now ? some great intent 95

Conceals him. When twelve years he scarce had
 I lost him, but so found, as well I saw [seen,
 He could not lose himself; but went about
 His Father's business. What he meant I mus'd,
 Since understand. Much more his absence now
 Thus long to some great purpose he obscures. 101
 But I to wait with patience am inur'd;
 My heart hath been a store-house long of things
 And sayings laid up, portending strange events.

Thus Mary pond'ring oft, and oft to mind 105
 Recalling what remarkably had pass'd
 Since first her salutation heard, with thoughts
 Meekly compos'd awaited the fulfilling:
 The while her Son, tracing the desert wild,
 Sole but with holiest meditations fed, 110
 Into himself descended, and at once
 All his great work to come before him set;
 How to begin, how to accomplish best
 His end of being on earth, and mission high:
 For Satan, with sly preface to return, 115
 Had left him vacant, and with speed was gone
 Up to the middle region of thick air,
 Where all his potentates in counsel sat;
 There, without sign of boast, or sign of joy,
 Solicitous and blank he thus began. 120

Princes, heaven's ancient sons, ethereal thrones,
 Demonian spirits now from the element
 Each of his reign allotted, rightlier call'd

111 *descended*] Pers. Sat. iv. 23.

'Ut nemo in sese tentat descendere.' Newton.

Powers of fire, air, water, and earth beneath,
 So may we hold our place, and these mild seats
 Without new trouble; such an enemy ¹²⁶
 Is risen to invade us, who no less
 Threatens, than our expulsion down to hell;
 I, as I undertook, and with the vote
 Consenting in full frequency was impower'd, ¹³⁰
 Have found him, view'd him, tasted him, but find
 Far other labour to be undergone
 Than when I dealt with Adam, first of men;
 Though Adam by his wife's allurements fell,
 However to this man inferior far, ¹³⁵
 If he be man by mother's side at least,
 With more than human gifts from heaven adorn'd,
 Perfections absolute, graces divine,
 And amplitude of mind to greatest deeds.
 Therefore I am return'd, lest confidence ¹⁴⁰
 Of my success with Eve in paradise
 Deceive ye to persuasion oversure
 Of like succeeding here: I summon all
 Rather to be in readiness, with hand
 Or counsel to assist, lest I, who erst ¹⁴⁵
 Thought none my equal, now be overmatch'd.
 So spake the old Serpent doubting, and from all
 With clamour was assur'd their utmost aid

¹²⁶ *mild seats*] Mild yoke. Sonnet xix. Mild heaven. Sonnet xxi. '*Mile* et cognatum est homini deus.' Sil. Ital. iv. 795.

¹³¹ *tasted him*] Psalm xxxiv. 8.

'Oh *taste* and see how gracious the Lord is.'

At his command; when from amidst them rose
 Belial, the dissolutes spirit that fell, 150
 The sensualest, and after Asmodai
 The fleshliest incubus, and thus advis'd.

Set women in his eye, and in his walk,
 Among daughters of men the fairest found;
 Many are in each region passing fair 155
 As the noon sky; more like to goddesses
 Than mortal creatures, graceful and discreet,
 Expert in amorous arts, enchanting tongues
 Persuasive, virgin majesty with mild
 And sweet allay'd, yet terrible to approach, 160
 Skill'd to retire, and in retiring draw
 Hearts after them tangled in amorous nets.
 Such object hath the power to soften and tame
 Severest temper, smooth the rugged'st brow,
 Enerve, and with voluptuous hope dissolve, 165
 Draw out with credulous desire, and lead
 At will the manliest, resolute breast,

156 *more like*] Hesiod Op. et Di. 62.

ἀθανάτους δὲ θεαῖς εἰς ὧπα ἔθηκεν
 Παρθενικῆς καλὸν εἶδος ἐπὶ ἥρατον.

162 *tangled*] Miltoni Eleg. i. 60.

'Aurea quæ fallax retia tendit amor.'

and P. L. xi. 585. *Dunster.*

166 *credulous*] Hor. Od. iv. i. 80.

'Spes animi credula mutui.' *Newton.*

168 *magnetic*] Mids. N. Dream, act ii. sc. 2.

'You draw me, you hard-hearted adamant,
 But yet you draw not iron.' *Todd.*

As the magnetic hardest iron draws.
 Women, when nothing else, beguil'd the heart
 Of wisest Solomon, and made him build, 170
 And made him bow to the gods of his wives.

To whom quick answer Satan thus return'd.
 Belial, in much uneven scale thou weigh'st
 All others by thyself; because of old 175
 Thou thyself doat'dst on woman-kind, admiring
 Their shape, their colour, and attractive grace,
 None are, thou think'st, but taken with such toys.
 Before the flood thou with thy lusty crew,
 False titled sons of God, roaming the earth,
 Cast wanton eyes on the daughters of men, 180
 And coupled with them, and begot a race.
 Have we not seen, or by relation heard,
 In courts and regal chambers how thou lurk'st,
 In wood or grove by mossy fountain side,
 In valley or green meadow, to way-lay 185
 Some beauty rare, Calisto, Clymene,
 Daphne, or Semele, Antiopa,
 Or Amynone, Syrinx, many more
 Too long, then lay'st thy scapes on names ador'd,
 Apollo, Neptune, Jupiter, or Pan, 190
 Satyr, or faun, or sylvan? but these haunts
 Delight not all; among the sons of men,
 How many have with a smile made small account
 Of beauty and her lures, easily scorn'd
 All her assaults, on worthier things intent? 195

184 *mossy*] Virg. Ecl. vii. 45 'Muscosi fontes.' *Dunster*.

Remember that Pellean conqueror, .
 A youth, how all the beauties of the east
 He slightly view'd, and slightly overpass'd ;
 How he surnam'd of Africa dismiss'd
 In his prime youth the fair Iberian maid. 200
 For Solomon, he liv'd at ease, and full
 Of honour, wealth, high fare, aim'd not beyond
 Higher design than to enjoy his state ;
 Thence to the bait of women lay expos'd :
 But he whom we attempt is wiser far 205
 Than Solomon, of more exalted mind,
 Made and set wholly on the accomplishment
 Of greatest things ; what woman will you find,
 Though of this age the wonder and the fame,
 On whom his leisure will vouchsafe an eye 210
 Of fond desire ? or should she confident,
 As sitting queen ador'd on beauty's throne,
 Descend with all her winning charms begirt
 To enamour, as the zone of Venus once
 Wrought that effect on Jove, so fables tell ; 215
 How would one look from his majestic brow,
 Seated as on the top of virtue's hill,

196 *Pellean*] Henry More's Poems, p. 251.

'Where's Nimrod now, and dreadful Hannibal?
 Where's that ambitious pert *Pellean lad*?'

204 *bait*] Spens. F. Q. v. viii. 1.

'Beauty's lovely bait.' *Dunster.*

216 *majestic brow*] Milton's Prose Works (of Retormation)
 by Symmons, vol. i. p. 54. 'And buy and sell the awful and
 majestic wrinkles of her brow.'

Discount'nance her despis'd, and put to rout
 All her array; her female pride deject,
 Or turn to reverent awe! for beauty stands 220
 In the admiration only of weak minds
 Led captive. Cease to admire, and all her plumes
 Fall flat and shrink into a trivial toy,
 At every sudden slighting quite abash'd:
 Therefore with manlier objects we must try 225
 His constancy, with such as have more show
 Of worth, of honour, glory, and popular praise;
 Rocks whereon greatest men have ofttest wreck'd;
 Or that which only seems to satisfy
 Lawful desires of nature, not beyond; 230
 And now I know he hungers where no food
 Is to be found, in the wide wilderness:
 The rest commit to me, I shall let pass
 No advantage, and his strength as oft assay.
 He ceas'd, and heard their grant in loud acclaim:
 Then forthwith to him takes a chosen band 235
 Of spirits, likest to himself in guile,
 To be at hand, and at his beck appear,
 If cause were to unfold some active scene
 Of various persons, each to know his part; 240
 Then to the desert takes with these his flight;
 Where still from shade to shade the Son of God

228 *oftest*] Milton's own edition, 'oftest,' the others 'often.'

Newton.

232 *wide*] In most editions falsely printed 'wild.'

Newton.

After forty days fasting had remain'd,
Now hung'ring first, and to himself thus said.

Where will this end? four times ten days I've
pass'd 245

Wand'ring this woody maze, and human food
Nor tasted, nor had appetite: that fast
To virtue I impute not, or count part
Of what I suffer here. If nature need not,
Or God support nature without repast 250
Though needing, what praise is it to endure?
But now I feel I hunger, which declares
Nature hath need of what she asks; yet God
Can satisfy that need some other way,
Though hunger still remain: so it remain 255
Without this body's wasting, I content me,
And from the sting of famine fear no harm,
Nor mind it, fed with better thoughts, that feed
Me hung'ring more to do my Father's will.

It was the hour of night, when thus the Son 260
Commun'd in silent walk, then laid him down
Under the hospitable covert nigh
Of trees thick interwoven; there he slept,
And dream'd, as appetite is wont to dream,
Of meats and drinks, nature's refreshment
sweet: 265

Him thought, he by the brook of Cherith stood,

266 *hospitable*] Hor. Od. ii. 8. 10.

'Umbram *hospitalem* consociare amant
Ramis.'

and Virg. Georg. iv. 24. *Dunster*.

And saw the ravens with their horny beaks
Food to Elijah bringing even and morn,
Though ravenous, taught to abstain from what they
brought:

He saw the prophet also how he fled 273
Into the desert, and how there he slept
Under a juniper: then how, awak'd,
He found his supper on the coals prepar'd,
And by the angel was bid rise and eat,
And eat the second time after repose, 275
The strength whereof suffic'd him forty days;
Sometimes that with Elijah he partook,
Or as a guest with Daniel at his pulse.
Thus wore out night, and now the herald lark
Left his ground-nest, high tow'ring to descry 280
The morn's approach, and greet her with his song.
As lightly from his grassy couch up rose
Our Saviour, and found all was but a dream;
Fasting he went to sleep, and fasting wak'd.
Up to a hill anon his steps he rear'd, 285
From whose high top to ken the prospect round,
If cottage were in view, sheep-cote, or herd;
But cottage, herd, or sheep-cote none he saw,
Only in a bottom saw a pleasant grove,

²⁶⁷ *horny*] Cic. de. Nat. Deor. i. 86.

'Aves excelsæ, cruribus rigidis, *corneo* proceroque *rostro*.'

Dunster.

²⁸⁷ *cottage*] Ap. Rhod. iv. 1247.

οὐδέ τιν' ἠρόμην,

Οὐ πάτον, οὐκ ἀπάνευθε κατανύσσαντο βοτήρα

Ἀέλιον, εὐκῆλῳ δὲ κατείχετο πάντα γαλήνη.

With chaunt of tuneful birds resounding loud ; 200
 Thither he bent his way, determin'd there
 To rest at noon, and enter'd soon the shade
 High roof'd, and walks beneath, and alleys brown,
 That open'd in the midst a woody scene ;
 Nature's own work it seem'd, nature taught art,
 And to a superstitious eye the haunt 205
 Of wood-gods and wood-nymphs ; he view'd it
 round,

When suddenly a man before him stood,
 Not rustic as before, but seemlier clad,
 As one in city, or court, or palace bred, 300
 And with fair speech these words to him address'd.

With granted leave officious I return,
 But much more wonder that the Son of God
 In this wild solitude so long should bide
 Of all things destitute, and well I know, 305
 Not without hunger. Others of some note,
 As story tells, have trod this wilderness ;
 The fugitive bond-woman with her son
 Out-cast Nebaioth, yet found here relief
 By a providing angel ; all the race 310
 Of Israel here had famish'd, had not God
 Rain'd from heaven manna ; and that prophet bold
 Native of Thebez wand'ring here was fed

206 *haunt*] Lucret. iv. 578.

'Hæc loca capripedes Satyros, Nymphasque tenere
 Finitimi fingunt'——— *Dunster.*

309 *here*] In Milton's own edition, it is 'found *he* relief ;'
 perhaps an unnoticed error of the press. *Todd.*

Twice by a voice inviting him to eat.
 Of thee these forty days none hath regard, 315
 Forty and more deserted here indeed. [hence ?

To whom thus Jesus. What conclud'st thou
 They all had need ; I, as thou seest, have none.

How hast thou hunger then ? Satan replied.
 Tell me, if food were now before thee set, 320
 Would'st thou not eat ? Thereafter as I like
 The giver, answer'd Jesus. Why should that
 Cause thy refusal ? said the subtle fiend.
 Hast thou not right to all created things ?
 Owe not all creatures by just right to thee 325
 Duty and service, nor to stay till bid,
 But tender all their power ? nor mention I
 Meats by the law unclean, or offer'd first
 To idols, those young Daniel could refuse ;
 Nor proffer'd by an enemy, though who 330
 Would scruple that, with want opprest ? behold
 Nature asham'd, or, better to express, [vey'd
 Troubled that thou should'st hunger, hath pur-
 From all the elements her choicest store
 To treat thee as beseems, and as her Lord 335
 With honour, only deign to sit and eat.

He spake no dream, for, as his words had end,
 Our Saviour lifting up his eyes beheld
 In ample space under the broadest shade

³²⁵ *nor*] So in Milton's own edition; in most others, 'not.'

³³⁴ *elements*] Juv. Sat. xi. 14.

'Interea gustus *elementa per omnia* quæerunt.' *Dunster*.

A table richly spread, in regal mode, 340
 With dishes pil'd, and meats of noblest sort
 And savour, beasts of chase, or fowl of game,
 In pastry built, or from the spit, or boil'd,
 Gris-amber-steam'd; all fish from sea or shore,
 Freshet or purling brook, of shell or fin, 345
 And exquisitest name, for which was drain'd
 Pontus, and Lucrine bay, and Afric coast.
 Alas how simple, to these cates compar'd,
 Was that crude apple that diverted Eve!
 And at a stately side-board, by the wine 350
 That fragrant smell diffus'd, in order stood

³⁴⁰ *A table*] 'Then dreamt he saw a *table richly spread*.'

Whiting's Albino, and Bellama, p. 105, (1687.)

³⁴⁰ *in regal mode*] 'Regales Epulæ.' Apulei Metam. Lib. v. p. 143. ed. Delph.

³⁴¹ *dishes pil'd*] Milton's Prose Works, vol. iv. p. 312, (a brief History of Moscovia) 'Then followed a number more of strange, and rare *dishes piled*, boiled, roast, and baked,' &c.

³⁴⁴ *Gris-amber*] Osborne's Memoirs of James I. vol. ii. p. 157, 'a whole pye, reckoned to my lord at ten pounds, being composed of *amber-grease*, magisterial of pearl, musk.'

³⁴⁵ *Freshet*] Brown B. Past. b. ii. s. 3. (1616.)

'Now love the *freshet*, and then love the sea.' Todd.

³⁴⁷ *Lucrine*] Hor. Epod. ii. 49.

'Non me *Lucrina* juverint conchyliis,'

and Sat. ii. iv. 32.

Dunster.

³⁴⁹ *diverted*] In the latter sense, 'turn aside,' so Drayton's Owle, 1604.

'Holla! thou wandering infant of my braine,
 Whither thus flingst thou; yet *divert* thy strayne;
 Return we back.'

Todd.

Tall stripling youths rich clad, of fairer hue
 Than Ganymed or Hylas ; distant more
 Under the trees now tripp'd, now solemn stood
 Nymphs of Diana's train, and Naiades 365
 With fruits and flowers from Amalthea's horn,
 And ladies of the Hesperides, that seem'd
 Fairer than feign'd of old, or fabled since
 Of fairy damsels met in forest wide
 By knights of Logres, or of Lyones, 370
 Lancelot, or Pelleas, or Pellenore,
 And all the while harmonious airs were heard
 Of chiming strings or charming pipes, and winds
 Of gentlest gale Arabian odours fann'd
 From their soft wings, and Flora's earliest smells.
 Such was the splendour, and the tempter now 380
 His invitation earnestly renew'd.

What doubts the Son of God to sit and eat?
 These are not fruits forbidden ; no interdict
 Defends the touching of these viands pure ; 375
 Their taste no knowledge works at least of evil,
 But life preserves, destroys life's enemy,
 Hunger, with sweet restorative delight.
 All these are spirits of air, and woods, and springs,
 Thy gentle ministers, who come to pay 378
 Thee homage, and acknowledge thee their lord :
 What doubt'st thou, Son of God ? sit down and eat.

368 *Ganymed*] 'A train of sleek, smooth, beauteous youths
 appear'd,
 The Ganymedes and Hylases.'
Mountford's Henry II. act iv. sc. 1.

To whom thus Jesus temperately replied.
 Said'st thou not that to all things I had right ?
 And who withholds my pow'r that right to use ?
 Shall I receive by gift what of my own,
 When and where likes me best, I can command ?
 I can at will, doubt not, as soon as thou,
 Command a table in this wilderness,
 And call swift flights of angels ministrant, 305
 Array'd in glory, on my cup to attend ;
 Why should'st thou then obtrude this diligence,
 In vain, where no acceptance it can find ?
 And with my hunger what hast thou to do ?
 Thy pompous delicacies I contemn, 300
 And count thy specious gifts no gifts, but guiles.

To whom thus answer'd Satan malecontent.
 That I have also power to give thou seest.
 If of that power I bring thee voluntary
 What I might have bestow'd on whom I pleas'd,
 And rather opportunely in this place 305
 Chose to impart to thy apparent need,
 Why should'st thou not accept it ? but I see
 What I can do or offer is suspect ;

305 *flights*] Hamlet, act v. sc. 6.

'And *flights of angels* sing thee to thy rest.'

Newton.

306 *ministrant*] Cic. Tusc. Disp. 1. c. 26. 'Non ambrosia
 Deos, aut nectare, aut juventute *pocula ministrante* ;' and
 Ov. Met. x. 161.

Dunster.

301 *no gifts*] Sophocl. Ajax. 665.

'Εχθρῶν ἄδωρα δῶρα κ' οὐκ ἐνέσχημα. Newton.

Of these things others quickly will dispose, 400
 Whose pains have earn'd the far-fet spoil. With that
 Both table and provision vanish'd quite
 With sound of harpies' wings and talons heard;
 Only the importune tempter still remain'd,
 And with these words his temptation pursu'd. 405

By hunger, that each other creature tames,
 Thou art not to be harm'd, therefore not mov'd;
 Thy temperance invincible besides,
 For no allurements yields to appetite,
 And all thy heart is set on high designs, 410
 High actions; but wherewith to be achieved?
 Great acts require great means of enterprise;
 Thou art unknown, unfriended, low of birth,
 A carpenter thy father known, thyself
 Bred up in poverty and straits at home, 415
 Lost in a desert here and hunger-bit:
 Which way, or from what hope, dost thou aspire
 To greatness? whence authority deriv'st?
 What followers, what retinue can'st thou gain?
 Or at thy heels the dizzy multitude, 420
 Longer than thou can'st feed them on thy cost?
 Money brings honour, friends, conquest, and realms.
 What rais'd Antipater the Edomite,
 And his son Herod plac'd on Judah's throne,

⁴⁰¹ *far-fet*] 'fet' 'far-fetched,' used by Chaucer, Spenser, &c. see Newton's note.

⁴⁰⁸ *Harpies*] 'Hark! how the Harpies' wings resound.'

Al. Ross *Mel Heliconium*, p. 64.

⁴⁰⁴ *importune*] Spenser, *F. Q. i. xii. 16.*

'And often blame the too *importune* fate.' *Newton.*

Thy throne, but gold that got him puissant friends ?
 Therefore, if at great things thou would'st arrive,
 Get riches first, get wealth, and treasure heap,
 Not difficult, if thou hearken to me ;
 Riches are mine, fortune is in my hand ;
 They whom I favour thrive in wealth amain, 430
 While virtue, valour, wisdom, sit in want.
 To whom thus Jesus patiently reply'd.
 Yet wealth without these three is impotent
 To gain dominion, or to keep it gain'd.
 Witness those ancient empires of the earth, 435
 In height of all their flowing wealth dissolv'd.
 But men endu'd with these have oft attain'd
 In lowest poverty to highest deeds ;
 Gideon and Jephtha, and the shepherd lad,
 Whose offspring on the throne of Judah sat 440
 So many ages, and shall yet regain
 That seat, and reign in Israel without end.
 Among the heathen, for throughout the world
 To me is not unknown what hath been done
 Worthy of memorial, canst thou not remember 445
 Quintius, Fabricius, Curius, Regulus ?
 For I esteem those names of men so poor,
 Who could do mighty things, and could contemn
 Riches though offer'd from the hands of kings.
 And what in me seems wanting, but that I 450
 May also in this poverty as soon
 Accomplish what they did, perhaps, and more ?
 Extol not riches then, the toil of fools,
 The wise man's cumbrance, if not snare, more apt
 To slacken virtue, and abate her edge, , 455

Than prompt her to do aught may merit praise.
What, if with like aversion I reject
Riches and realms? yet not, for that a crown,
Golden in show, is but a wreath of thorns,
Brings dangers, troubles, cares, and sleepless nights
To him who wears the regal diadem, 461
When on his shoulders each man's burden lies;
For therein stands the office of a king,
His honour, virtue, merit, and chief praise,
That for the public all this weight he bears. 465
Yet he who reigns within himself, and rules
Passions, desires, and fears, is more a king;
Which ev'ry wise and virtuous man attains:
And who attains not, ill aspires to rule
Cities of men, or head-strong multitudes, 470
Subject himself to anarchy within,
Or lawless passions in him which he serves.
But to guide nations in the way of truth
By saving doctrine, and from error lead
To know, and knowing worship God aright, 475
Is yet more kingly; this attracts the soul,
Governs the inner man, the nobler part;
That other o'er the body only reigns,
And oft by force, which to a gen'rous mind,
So reigning, can be no sincere delight. 480
Besides, to give a kingdom hath been thought
Greater and nobler done, and to lay down
Far more magnanimous than to assume.
Riches are needless then, both for themselves,
And for thy reason why they should be sought,
To gain a sceptre, ofttest better miss'd.

PARADISE REGAINED.

BOOK III.

So spake the Son of God, and Satan stood
 A while as mute, confounded what to say,
 What to reply, confuted, and convinc'd
 Of his weak arguing and fallacious drift;
 At length, collecting all his serpent wiles, 5
 With soothing words renew'd, him thus accosts.

I see thou know'st what is of use to know,
 What best to say, canst say, to do canst do;
 Thy actions to thy words accord, thy words
 To thy large heart give utterance due, thy heart
 Contains of good, wise, just, the perfect shape.
 Should kings and nations from thy mouth consult,
 Thy counsel would be as the oracle
 Urim and Thummim, those oraculous gems
 On Aaron's breast; or tongue of seers old 15
 Infallible: or wert thou sought to deeds
 That might require th' array of war, thy skill
 Of conduct would be such, that all the world
 Could not sustain thy prowess, or subsist
 In battel, though against thy few in arms. 20
 These god-like virtues wherefore dost thou hide.

Affecting private life, or more obscure
 In savage wilderness? wherefore deprive
 All earth her wonder at thy acts, thyself
 The fame and glory, glory the reward 25
 That sole excites to high attempts, the flame
 Of most erected spirits, most temper'd pure
 Ætherial, who all pleasures else despise,
 All treasures and all gain esteem as dross,
 And dignities and powers, all but the highest? 30
 Thy years are ripe, and over-ripe; the son
 Of Macedonian Philip had ere these
 Won Asia, and the throne of Cyrus held
 At his dispose; young Scipio had brought down
 The Carthaginian pride: young Pompey quell'd
 The Pontic king, and in triumph had rode.
 Yet years, and to ripe years judgment mature,
 Quench not the thirst of glory, but augment.
 Great Julius, whom now all the world admires,
 The more he grew in years, the more inflam'd 40
 With glory, wept that he had liv'd so long
 Inglorious: but thou yet art not too late.
 To whom our Saviour calmly thus replied.
 Thou neither dost persuade me to seek wealth
 For empire's sake, nor empire to affect 45

²⁷ *erected*] So P. L. i. 679; 'erected spirits' is a classical phrase; 'magno animo et *erecto*.' Cic. p. Rege Deiot. 12.
Dunster.

²⁸ *dispose*] So Shakesp. King John, act i. sc. 8.

'Needs must you lay your heart at his *dispose*.'

Dunster.

For glory's sake by all thy argument.
 For what is glory but the blaze of fame,
 The people's praise, if *always* praise unmixt ?
 And what the people but a herd confus'd,
 A miscellaneous rabble, who extol [praise ?
 Things vulgar, and well weigh'd, scarce worth the
 They praise and they admire they know not what,
 And know not whom, but as one leads the other :
 And what delight to be by such extoll'd,
 To live upon their tongues and be their talk, ⁵⁵
 Of whom to be disprais'd were no small praise ?
 His lot who dares be singularly good.
 Th' intelligent among them and the wise
 Are few, and glory scarce of few is rais'd.
 This is true glory and renown, when God, ⁶⁰
 Looking on the earth, with approbation marks
 The just man, and divulges him through heaven
 To all his angels, who with true applause
 Recount his praises. Thus he did to Job, ⁶⁴
 When, to extend his fame thro' heaven and earth,
 As thou to thy reproach may'st well remember,
 He ask'd thee, Hast thou seen my servant Job ?
 Famous he was in heaven, on earth less known ;
 Where glory is false glory, attributed
 To things not glorious, men not worthy of fame.
 They err who count it glorious to subdue ⁷¹
 By conquest far and wide, to overrun

⁶⁶ *disprais'd*] Tickell and Fenton corruptly read 'despised,'
 after Tonson's editions of 1707, 1711: the genuine reading
 is restored in Tonson's edition, 1747.

Large countries, and in field great battles win,
 Great cities by assault : what do these worthies,
 But rob, and spoil, burn, slaughter, and enslave
 Peaceable nations, neighbouring or remote, 70
 Made captive, yet deserving freedom more
 Than those their conquerors, who leave behind
 Nothing but ruin wheresoe'er they rove,
 And all the flourishing works of peace destroy,
 Then swell with pride, and must be titled gods,
 Great benefactors of mankind, deliverers, 80
 Worshipp'd with temple, priest, and sacrifice ;
 One is the son of Jove, of Mars the other ;
 Till conqueror Death discover them scarce men,
 Rolling in brutish vices, and deform'd, 85
 Violent or shameful death their due reward.
 But if there be in glory aught of good,
 It may by means far different be attain'd
 Without ambition, war, or violence ; 90
 By deeds of peace, by wisdom eminent,
 By patience, temperance. I mention still
 Him whom thy wrongs with saintly patience borne
 Made famous in a land and times obscure ;
 Who names not now with honour patient Job ?
 Poor Socrates, who next more memorable ? 95
 By what he taught and suffer'd for so doing,
 For truth's sake suffering death unjust, lives now

⁸⁰ *Rolling*] G. Withers' *Speculum*, 1660, p. 69.

'They might in *brutish lusts* at pleasure *roll*.'

Dunster has marked the conformity with expressions of Cicero,
 'in omni dedecore *volutatus* es,' &c.

Equal in fame to proudest conquerors.
 Yet if for fame and glory aught be done, 100
 Aught suffer'd ; if young African for fame
 His wasted country freed from Punic rage,
 The deed becomes unprais'd, the man at least,
 And loses, though but verbal, his reward.
 Shall I seek glory then, as vain men seek, 105
 Oft not deserv'd ? I seek not mine, but his
 Who sent me, and thereby witness whence I am.

To whom the tempter murmuring thus replied.
 Think not so slight of glory, therein least
 Resembling thy great Father : he seeks glory, 110
 And for his glory all things made, all things
 Orders and governs ; nor content in heaven
 By all his angels glorify'd, requires
 Glory from men, from all men good or bad,
 Wise or unwise, no difference, no exemption ; 115
 Above all sacrifice or hallow'd gift
 Glory he requires, and glory he receives
 Promiscuous from all nations, Jew, or Greek,
 Or barbarous, nor exception hath declar'd :
 From us, his foes pronounc'd, glory he exacts. 120

To whom our Saviour fervently replied.
 And reason, since his word all things produc'd,
 Though chiefly not for glory as prime end,
 But to show forth his goodness, and impart
 His good communicable to every soul 125
 Freely ; of whom what could he less expect
 Than glory and benediction, that is, thanks,
 The slightest, easiest, readiest, recompense

From them who could return him nothing else,
 And not returning that would likeliest render 180
 Contempt instead, dishonour, obloquy?
 Hard recompense, unsuitable return
 For so much good, so much beneficence.
 But why should man seek glory, who of his own
 Hath nothing, and to whom nothing belongs 185
 But condemnation, ignominy, and shame?
 Who for so many benefits receiv'd
 Turn'd recreant to God, ingrate and false,
 And so of all true good himself despoil'd,
 Yet, sacrilegious, to himself would take 190
 That which to God alone of right belongs:
 Yet so much bounty is in God, such grace,
 That who advance his glory, not their own,
 Them he himself to glory will advance.
 So spake the Son of God; and here again 195
 Satan had not to answer, but stood struck
 With guilt of his own sin, for he himself
 Insatiable of glory had lost all;
 Yet of another plea bethought him soon.
 Of glory, as thou wilt, said he, so deem, 200
 Worth or not worth the seeking, let it pass.
 But to a kingdom thou art born, ordain'd

¹⁸⁰ *that*] Tickell and Fenton follow the corrupt reading of Tonson's ed. 1707, 1711, '*what*.' The genuine reading restored in ed. 1747.

¹⁹¹ *the*] All the editions but the first read '*their*.' Tonson's ed. 1747, restored the genuine reading: the correctness of this edition of Tonson makes it very valuable.

To sit upon thy father David's throne,
 By mother's side thy father; though thy right
 Be now in powerful hands, that will not part 155
 Easily from possession won with arms.
 Judæa now and all the promis'd land,
 Reduc'd a province under Roman yoke,
 Obeys Tiberius; nor is always rul'd
 With temperate sway: oft have they violated 160
 The temple, oft the law with foul affronts,
 Abominations rather, as did once
 Antiochus: and think'st thou to regain
 Thy right by sitting still or thus retiring?
 So did not Maccabeus: he indeed 165
 Retir'd unto the desert, but with arms;
 And o'er a mighty king so oft prevail'd,
 That by strong hand his family obtain'd,
 Though priests, the crown, and David's throne
 usurp'd,
 With Modin and her suburbs once content. 170
 If kingdom move thee not, let move thee zeal
 And duty; zeal and duty are not slow;
 But on occasion's forelock watchful wait.
 They themselves rather are occasion best,
 Zeal of thy father's house, duty to free 175
 Thy country from her heathen servitude:
 So shalt thou best fulfil, best verify
 The prophets old, who sung thy endless reign;

171 *move*] 'Let move thee zeal;' a bolder Latinism than
 is quite consonant with English poetry. See also P. L. ii.
 448, 'what *remains* him less;' and ix. 41. *Dunster.*

The happier reign the sooner it begins ;
 Reign then ; what canst thou better do the while ?

To whom our Saviour answer thus return'd. 181

All things are best fulfill'd in their due time,
 And time there is for all things, Truth hath said :

If of my reign prophetic writ hath told
 That it shall never end, so when begin 18

The Father in his purpose hath decreed,
 He in whose hand all times and seasons roll.

What, if he hath decreed that I shall first
 Be try'd in humble state and things adverse,

By tribulations, injuries, insults, 190
 Contempts, and scorns, and snares, and violence,

Suffering, abstaining, quietly expecting,
 Without distrust or doubt, that he may know

What I can suffer, how obey ? who best
 Can suffer, best can do ; best reign, who first 195

Well hath obey'd ; just trial, ere I merit
 My exaltation without change or end.

But what concerns it thee when I begin
 My everlasting kingdom ? why art thou
 Solicitous ? what moves thy inquisition ? 200

Know'st thou not that my rising is thy fall,
 And my promotion will be thy destruction ?

To whom the tempter, inly rack'd, replied.
 Let that come when it comes ; all hope is lost

Of my reception into grace : what worse ? 205
 For where no hope is left, is left no fear :

189 *adverse*] S. Ital. iv. 605.

'Explorant adversa viros.' *Dunster*.

If there be worse, the expectation more
 Of worse torments me than the feeling can.
 I would be at the worst, worst is my port,
 My harbour, and my ultimate repose ; 210
 The end I would attain, my final good.
 My error was my error, and my crime
 My crime ; whatever for itself condemn'd,
 And will alike be punish'd, whether thou
 Reign or reign not ; though to that gentle brow 215
 Willingly could I fly, and hope thy reign,
 From that placid aspect and meek regard,
 Rather than aggravate my evil state,
 Would stand between me and thy father's ire,
 Whose ire I dread more than the fire of hell, 220
 A shelter, and a kind of shading cool
 Interposition, as a summer's cloud.
 If I then to the worst that can be haste,
 Why move thy feet so slow to what is best,
 Happiest both to thyself and all the world, 225
 That thou who worthiest art should'st be their king ?
 Perhaps thou linger'st in deep thoughts detain'd
 Of the enterprize so hazardous and high :
 No wonder, for, though in thee be united
 What of perfection can in man be found, 230
 Or human nature can receive, consider,
 Thy life hath yet been private, most part spent
 At home, scarce view'd the Galilean towns,
 And once a year Jerusalem, few days [serve ?
 Short sojourn ; and what thence couldst thou ob-
 The world thou hast not seen, much less her glory,

Empires, and monarchs, and their radiant courts,
 Best school of best experience, quickest insight
 In all things that to greatest actions lead.
 The wisest, unexperienc'd, will be ever 240
 Timorous and loth, with novice modesty,
 As he who seeking asses found a kingdom,
 Irresolute, unhardy, unadvent'rous :
 But I will bring thee where thou soon shalt quit
 Those rudiments, and see before thine eyes 245
 The monarchies of the earth, their pomp, and state,
 Sufficient introduction to inform
 Thee of thyself so apt, in regal arts
 And regal mysteries, that thou may'st know
 How best their opposition to withstand. 250

With that, such power was given him then, he took
 The Son of God up to a mountain high.
 It was a mountain at whose verdant feet
 A spacious plain outstretch'd in circuit wide
 Lay pleasant ; from his side two rivers flow'd, 255
 Th' one winding, th' other straight, and left be-
 tween

Fair champain with less rivers intervein'd,
 Then meeting join'd their tribute to the sea :
 Fertile of corn the glebe, of oil, and wine ;
 With herds the pastures throng'd, with flocks the
 hills ;

Huge cities and high tower'd that well might seem
 The seats of mightiest monarchs, and so large

255 *insight*] Milton's own edition, and all the earlier edi-
 tions, except Tonson's 1747 read '*in sight*'

The prospect was, that here and there was room
 For barren desert, fountainless and dry.
 To this high mountain top the tempter brought ~~me~~
 Our Saviour, and new train of words began.

Well have we speeded, and, o'er hill and dale,
 Forest, and field, and flood, temples, and towers,
 Cut shorter many a league; here thou behold'st
 Assyria and her empire's ancient bounds, 270
 Araxes, and the Caspian lake, thence on
 As far as Indus east, Euphrates west,
 And oft beyond; to south the Persian bay,
 And inaccessible the Arabian drought:
 Here Nineveh, of length within her wall 275
 Several days' journey, built by Ninus old,
 Of that first golden monarchy the seat,
 And seat of Salmanassar, whose success
 Israel in long captivity still mourns;
 There Babylon, the wonder of all tongues, 280
 As ancient, but rebuilt by him who twice
 Judah and all thy father David's house
 Led captive, and Jerusalem laid waste,
 Till Cyrus set them free; Persepolis
 His city there thou seest, and Bactra there; 285
 Ecbatana her structure vast there shows,
 And Hecatompylos her hundred gates;
 There Susa by Choaspes, amber stream,

²⁸⁴ *fountainless and dry*] 'Deserts desolate, and dry.'
 Drayton's *Moses*, lib. ii. p. 1803, ed. 8vo.

²⁸⁸ *Choaspes*] See Plin. N. Hist. lib. xxiv. c. cii. vol. iv.

The drink of none but kings ; of later fame
 Built by Emathian, or by Parthian hands, 290
 The great Seleucia, Nisibis, and there
 Artaxata, Terodon, Ctesiphon,
 Turning with easy eye thou may'st behold.
 All these the Parthian — now some ages past
 By great Arsaces led, who founded first 295
 That empire — under his dominion holds,
 From the luxurious kings of Antioch won.
 And just in time thou com'st to have a view
 Of his great power ; for now the Parthian king
 In Ctesiphon hath gather'd all his host 300
 Against the Scythian, whose incursions wild
 Have wasted Sogdiana ; to her aid
 He marches now in haste ; see, though from far,
 His thousands, in what martial equipage

p. 362. ed. Brot. and lib. xxxi. c. xxi. 3. vol. v. p. 299,
 'Parthorum reges ex Choaspe et Eulæo tantum bibunt.'

'It is a fact worthy of remark, that at this moment, while
 all the inhabitants of Kermanshah drink of the stream of
 Aub Dedoong, and of the spring called Aubi-i-Hassan-Khan,
 the *king's son alone* has the water for himself and his harem
 brought from the stream of the Kara Soo (the Choaspes).
 We drank of it ourselves as we passed, and from its supe-
 riority to all the waters of which we had tasted since leaving
 the banks of the Tigris, the draught was delicious enough to
 be sweet even to the palsied taste of royalty itself.' Bucking-
 ham's Trav. in Assyria, &c. p. 119. On the delicious water
 of the Nile, see Forbes's Oriental Mem. ii. p. 72; and on
 that of the Ganges, 139. The Mogul Emperors travelled
 with it : Akber never drank any other, and called it the
 'Water of Life.'

They issue forth, steel bows and shafts their arms,
 Of equal dread in flight or in pursuit; ⁸⁰⁶
 All horsemen, in which fight they most excel :
 See how in warlike muster they appear,
 In rhombs, and wedges, and half-moons, and
 wings.

He look'd, and saw what numbers numberless ⁸¹⁰
 The city gates outpour'd, light armed troops
 In coats of mail and military pride ;
 In mail their horses clad, yet fleet and strong,
 Prancing their riders bore, the flower and choice
 Of many provinces from bound to bound ; ⁸¹⁵
 From Arachosia, from Candaor east,
 And Margiana to the Hyrcanian cliffs

⁸⁰⁶ *fight*] Lucan. Phars. i. 229.

'Missa Parthi post terga sagitta.' *Dunster.*

⁸⁰⁹ *wedges and half-moons*] Virgil mentions the 'wedge;
Æn. xii. 457. 'densi cuneis se quisque coactis agglomerant:'
 and Stat. Theb. v. 146, the half-moon; *lunatumque putes*
agmen descendere.' *Dunster.*

⁸¹⁰ *numbers numberless*] For this expression (which was
 very common in old English Poets anterior to Milton) see
 Peele's Works, by Dyce, sec. ed. 1829, vol. i. p. 227.

'A number numberless, appointed well
 For tournament.'

and Heywood's Troy, p. 208.

⁸¹¹ *gates*] Virg. *Æn. xii. 121,*

'——— plenis

Agmina se fundunt portis.' *Dunster.*

⁸¹⁴ *Prancing*] Compare the description in Heliodori *Æthiop.*
 lib. iii. p. 175. ed. Mitscherlich.

Of Caucasus, and dark Iberian dales ;
From Atropatia and the neighbouring plains
Of Adiabene, Media, and the south 320
Of Susiana, to Balsara's haven.
He saw them in their forms of battle rang'd,
How quick they wheel'd, and flying behind them
shot

Sharp sleet of arrowy showers against the face
Of their pursuers, and overcame by flight ; 235
The field all iron cast a gleaming brown :
Nor wanted clouds of foot, nor on each horn
Cuirassiers all in steel for standing fight,
Chariots or elephants endor'd with towers
Of archers, nor of labouring pioneers 260
A multitude with spades and axes arm'd
To lay hills plain, fell woods, or valleys fill,
Or, where plain was raise hill, or overlay
With bridges rivers proud, as with a yoke ;
Mules after these, camels, and dromedaries, 285
And waggons fraught with utensils of war.

824 *arrowy*] Æn. xii. 284.

'Tempestas telorum, ac ferreus ingruit imber.' *Dunster.*

826 *brown*] Euripidis Phæen. 110.

κατάχαλκον ἄπαν

Πεδίον ἀστράπτει.

Dunster.

820 *endors'd*] B. Jonson's Epig. to W. Earl of Newcastle:

'Nay, so your seat his beauties did *endorse*,
As I began to wish myself a horse.' *Dunster.*

884 *goke*] Æschyli Persæ, 71.

Ζυγὸν ἀμφιβαλὼν αὐχένι πόντου. Τηγεῖ.

Such forces met not, nor so wide a camp,
 When Agrican with all his northern powers
 Besieg'd Albracca, as romances tell,
 The city of Gallaphrone, from thence to win 346
 The fairest of her sex Angelica
 His daughter, sought by many prowest knights,
 Both Paynim, and the peers of Charlemain.
 Such and so numerous was their chivalry ;
 At sight whereof the fiend yet more presum'd, 348
 And to our Saviour thus his words renew'd.

That thou may'st know I seek not to engage
 Thy virtue, and not every way secure
 On no slight grounds thy safety, hear and mark
 To what end I have brought thee hither and shown
 All this fair sight ; thy kingdom, though foretold
 By prophet or by angel, unless thou 352
 Endeavor, as thy father David did,
 Thou never shalt obtain ; prediction still
 In all things, and all men, supposes means, 355
 Without means us'd, what it predicts revokes.
 But say thou wert possess'd of David's throne
 By free consent of all, none opposite,
 Samaritan or Jew ; how could'st thou hope
 Long to enjoy it quiet and secure, 358
 Between two such enclosing enemies,
 Roman and Parthian ? therefore one of these

357 *Such*] Lucan. Phars. iii. 288.

'coiere nec unquam

Tam variæ cultu gentes, tam dissona vulgi
 Ora.' *Dunster.*

Thou must make sure thy own, the Parthian first
 By my advice, as nearer, and of late
 Found able by invasion to annoy 365
 Thy country, and captive lead away her kings,
 Antigonus and old Hyrcanus, bound,
 Maugre the Roman. It shall be my task
 To render thee the Parthian at dispose ;
 Choose which thou wilt, by conquest or by league.
 By him thou shalt regain, without him not, 371
 That which alone can truly reinstall thee
 In David's royal seat, his true successor,
 Deliverance of thy brethren, those ten tribes
 Whose offspring in his territory yet serve, 375
 In Habor, and among the Medes dispers'd ;
 Ten sons of Jacob, two of Joseph lost
 Thus long from Israel, serving, as of old
 Their fathers in the land of Egypt serv'd,
 This offer sets before thee to deliver. 380
 These if from servitude thou shalt restore
 To their inheritance, then, nor till then,
 Thou on the throne of David in full glory,
 From Egypt to Euphrates and beyond,
 Shalt reign, and Rome or Cæsar not need fear.

To whom our Saviour answer'd thus unmov'd.
 Much ostentation vain of fleshly arm, 387
 And fragile arms, much instrument of war
 Long in preparing, soon to nothing brought,
 Before mine eyes thou hast set ; and in my ear

³⁸⁸ *instrument*] 'Totius belli *instrumento* et *apparatu*.' Cic.
 Acad. ii. 1. *Dunster*.

Vented much policy, and projects deep 391
Of enemies, of aids, battles, and leagues,
Plausible to the world, to me worth naught.
Means I must use, thou say'st, prediction else
Will unpredict and fail me of the throne. 395
My time, I told thee, and that time for thee
Were better farthest off, is not yet come ;
When that comes, think not thou to find me slack
On my part aught endeavoring, or to need
Thy politic maxims, or that cumbersome 400
Luggage of war there shown me, argument
Of human weakness rather than of strength.
My brethren, as thou call'st them, those ten tribes
I must deliver, if I mean to reign
David's true heir, and his full sceptre sway 405
To just extent over all Israel's sons.
But whence to thee this zeal ? where was it then
For Israel, or for David, or his throne,
When thou stood'st up his tempter to the pride
Of numb'ring Israel, which cost the lives 410
Of threescore and ten thousand Israelites
By three days' pestilence ? such was thy zeal
To Israel then, the same that now to me.
As for those captive tribes, themselves were they
Who wrought their own captivity, fell off 415
From God to worship calves, the deities
Of Egypt, Baal next, and Ashtaroth,
And all th' idolatries of heathen round,
Besides their other worse than heathenish crimes ;
Nor in the land of their captivity, 420

Humbled themselves, or penitent besought
The God of their forefathers ; but so died
Impenitent, and left a race behind
Like to themselves, distinguishable scarce
From Gentiles, but by circumcision vain, 485
And God with idols in their worship join'd.
Should I of these the liberty regard?
Who, freed as to their ancient patrimony,
Unhumbled, unrepentant, unreform'd,
Headlong would follow, and to their gods perhaps
Of Bethel and of Dan. No, let them serve
Their enemies, who serve idols with God.
Yet he at length, time to himself best known,
Rememb'ring Abraham, by some wondrous call
May bring them back repentant and sincere, 495
And at their passing cleave the Assyrian flood,
While to their native land with joy they haste,
As the Red Sea and Jordan once he cleft,
When to the promis'd land their fathers pass'd ;
To his due time and providence I leave them. 499
So spake Israel's true king, and to the fiend
Made answer meet, that made void all his wiles.
So fares it when with truth falsehood contends.

PARADISE REGAINED.

BOOK IV.

PERPLEX'D and troubled at his bad success
 The tempter stood, nor had what to reply,
 Discover'd in his fraud, thrown from his hope
 So oft, and the persuasive rhetoric
 That sleek'd his tongue, and won so much on Eve,
 So little here, nay lost : but Eve was Eve,
 This far his over-match, who, self-deceiv'd
 And rash, before-hand had no better weigh'd
 The strength he was to cope with, or his own :
 But as a man, who had been matchless held 10
 In cunning, over-reach'd where least he thought,
 To salve his credit, and for very spite,
 Still will be tempting him who foils him still,
 And never cease, though to his shame the more ;
 Or as a swarm of flies in vintage time, 15
 About the wine-press where sweet must is pour'd,
 Beat off, returns as oft with humming sound ;
 Or surging waves against a solid rock,
 Though all to shivers dash'd, the assault renew,
 Vain batt'ry, and in froth or bubbles end ; 20
 So Satan, whom repulse upon repulse
 Met ever, and to shameful silence brought,
 Yet gives not o'er, though desperate of success,

And his vain importunity pursues.
 He brought our Saviour to the western side ²⁵
 Of that high mountain, whence he might behold
 Another plain, long, but in breadth not wide,
 Wash'd by the southern sea, and on the north
 To equal length back'd with a ridge of hills, [men
 That screen'd the fruits of the earth and seats of
 From cold Septentrion blasts; thence in the midst
 Divided by a river, of whose banks
 On each side an imperial city stood,
 With towers and temples proudly elevate
 On seven small hills, with palaces adorn'd, ³⁵
 Porches, and theatres, baths, aqueducts,
 Statues, and trophies, and triumphal arcs,
 Gardens, and groves presented to his eyes,
 Above the height of mountains interpos'd :
 By what strange parallax or optic skill ⁴⁰
 Of vision, multiply'd through air, or glass
 Of telescope, were curious to enquire :
 And now the tempter thus his silence broke.

The city which thou seest no other deem
 Than great and glorious Rome, queen of the earth,

³¹ *septentrion*] See Drayton's *Polyolbion*, Song 10, p. 844, ed. 8vo.

'From the septentrion cold.'

³⁵ *seven*] Virg. *Georg.* ii. 535.

'*Septemque una sibi muro circumdedit arces.*' *Newton.*

⁴⁵ *queen*] *Rutilii Itin.* i. 47.

'*Exaudi, regina tui pulcherrima mundi.*' *Dunster.*

In the Ode to Rome, falsely attributed to Erinna, that city is termed '*δαίμων ἀνασσα.*' ver. 2. *A. Dyce.*

So far renown'd, and with the spoils enrich'd
 Of nations. There the Capitol thou see'st
 Above the rest lifting his stately head
 On the Tarpeian rock, her citadel
 Impregnable, and there mount Palatine, 50
 Th' imperial palace, compass huge, and high
 The structure, skill of noblest architects,
 With gilded battlements conspicuous far,
 Turrets, and terraces, and glittering spires.
 Many a fair edifice besides, more like 55
 Houses of gods—so well I have dispos'd
 My aery microscope—thou mayst behold,
 Outside and inside both, pillars and roofs,
 Carv'd work, the hand of fam'd artificers
 In cedar, marble, ivory, or gold. 60
 Thence to the gates cast round thine eye, and see
 What conflux issuing forth, or ent'ring in,
 Prætors, proconsuls to their provinces
 Hasting, or on return, in robes of state :
 Lictors and rods, the ensigns of their power, 65
 Legions and cohorts, turms of horse and wings ;
 Or embassies from regions far remote,
 In various habits, on the Appian road,
 Or on th' Emilian, some from farthest south,
 Syene, and where the shadow both way falls, 70
 Meroe, Nilotic isle ; and more to west,

⁵⁰ *gods*] Some editions read incorrectly 'God.'

⁶⁶ *turms*] Virg. *Æn.* v. 560.

'Equitum turmæ.' *Newton.*

⁷¹ *Nilotic*] Martial *Ep.* vi. 80.

'Nilotica tellus.' *Dunster.*

The realm of Bocchus to the Black-moor sea ;
 From the Asian kings and Parthian, among these,
 From India and the golden Chersonese,
 And utmost Indian isle Taprobane, 75
 Dusk faces with white silken turbans wreath'd :
 From Gallia, Gades, and the British west,
 Germans, and Scythians, and Sarmatians north
 Beyond Danubius to the Tauric pool.
 All nations now to Rome obedience pay, 80
 To Rome's great emperor, whose wide domain
 In ample territory, wealth and power,
 Civility of manners, arts, and arms,
 And long renown, thou justly may'st prefer
 Before the Parthian ; these two thrones except, 85
 The rest are barbarous, and scarce worth the sight,
 Shar'd among petty kings too far remov'd.
 These having shown thee, I have shown thee all
 The kingdoms of the world, and all their glory.
 This emperor hath no son, and now is old, 90
 Old and lascivious, and from Rome retir'd
 To Capreæ, an island small but strong
 On the Campanian shore, with purpose there
 His horrid lusts in private to enjoy,
 Committing to a wicked favourite 95
 All public cares, and yet of him suspicious,
 Hated of all and hating : with what ease,
 Indu'd with regal virtues as thou art,

⁷² *Black-moor*] Hor. Od. ii. vi. 8.

Ubi *Maura* semper
Æstuat unda. *Dunster.*

Appearing and beginning noble deeds, 99
 Might'st thou expel this monster from his throne,
 Now made a sty, and, in his place ascending,
 A victor people free from servile yoke !
 And with my help thou may'st ; to me the power
 Is given, and by that right I give it thee.
 Aim therefore at no less than all the world ; 105
 Aim at the highest ; without the highest attain'd,
 Will be for thee no sitting, or not long,
 On David's throne, be prophesied what will.
 To whom the Son of God unmov'd replied.
 Nor doth this grandeur and majestic show 110
 Of luxury, though call'd magnificence,
 More than of arms before, allure mine eye,
 Much less my mind ; though thou should'st add to
 tell
 Their sumptuous gluttonies and gorgeous feasts
 On citron tables or Atlantic stone, 115

¹¹⁵ *citron tables or Atlantic stone*] Citron wood grew on Mount Atlas, and was held by the Romans as valuable as gold. Martial Ep. xiv. 89. 'Accipe felices, *Atlantica* munera, sylvas.' Atlantic stone, the Commentators say, was never heard of ; nor can they explain the meaning of the expression : had the mantle therefore of Bentley descended on me, I should read

' ————— and gorgeous feasts
 On citron tables or Atlantic, stor'd.'

I can find no account of Atlantic marble in the learned work of Cariophylus de Ant. Marmoribus.—Since writing the above, I believe that I have detected the true meaning of *Atlantic stone*, which has escaped the Commentators. Pliny mentions that the woods of *Atlas* were eagerly searched by the Romans for

—For I have also heard, perhaps have read—
 Their wines of Setia, Cales, and Falerne,
 Chios, and Crete, and how they quaff in gold,
 Crystal and myrrhine cups emboss'd with gems
 And studs of pearl; to me should'st tell, who thirst
 And hunger still. Then embassies thou show'st
 From nations far and nigh. What honour that,
 But tedious waste of time to sit and hear
 So many hollow compliments and lies,
 Outlandish flatteries? then proceed'st to talk 128
 Of the emperor, how easily subdu'd,
 How gloriously; I shall, thou say'st, expel
 A brutish monster: what if I withal
 Expel a devil who first made him such?

citron wood, and ivory. Hist. Nat. lib. v. c. i. 1. vol. i. p. 366, ed. Brot. 'quam luxuriæ, cujus efficacissima vis sentitur atque maxima, cum *ebori citroque* silvæ exquirantur.' Diod. Siculus joins them, lib. v. c. xlvi. vol. iii. p. 355, ed. Bip. 'τὰ τε θυρώματα τοῦ ναοῦ θανμαστός ἔχει τὰς κατασκευὰς ἐξ ἀργύρου καὶ χρυσοῦ καὶ ἐλέφαντος, ἐπὶ δὲ θύας δεδημιουργημένας'; so the author of the Apocalypse, xviii. 12. πᾶν ξύλον θύων, καὶ πᾶν σκῆνος ἐλεφάντινον; Suidas and Pausanias also mention them together. We may, therefore, consider 'Atlantic stone' to be a learned and poetical way for naming the 'Ebor Atlanticum;' and Pliny also says, that the forests in Mauritania were filled with *elephants*, lib. v. c. i. 1. vol. i. p. 364, the same forests which afforded the *citron wood*. Should 'stone' be still thought a singular expression for ivory, it may be observed, that 'fossil ivory' might have been sought for; and that Pliny, lib. xxxvi. c. xxix. 18, vol. vi. p. 280, mentions a *mineral ivory*, which he calls a *stone*.

¹¹⁹ *myrrhine*] Plinii N. Hist. lib. xxxv. c. xlvi. vol. vi. p. 172. 'Quoniam eo pervenit luxuria, ut etiam fictilia pluris constant quam *murrhina*.'

Let his tormentor conscience find him out ; 130
 For him I was not sent, nor yet to free
 That people victor once, now vile and base,
 Deservedly made vassal, who, once just,
 Frugal, and mild, and temperate, conquer'd well,
 But govern ill the nations under yoke, 135
 Peeling their provinces, exhausted all
 By lust and rapine ; first ambitious grown
 Of triumph, that insulting vanity ;
 Then cruel, by their sports to blood inur'd
 Of fighting beasts, and men to beasts expos'd ; 140
 Luxurious by their wealth, and greedier still,
 And from the daily scene effeminate.
 What wise and valiant man would seek to free
 These thus degenerate, by themselves enslav'd,
 Or could of inward slaves make outward free ? 145
 Know therefore, when my season comes to sit
 On David's throne, it shall be like a tree
 Spreading and overshadowing all the earth,
 Or as a stone that shall to pieces dash
 All monarchies besides throughout the world, 150
 And of my kingdom there shall be no end.
 Means there shall be to this, but what the means,
 Is not for thee to know, nor me to tell.
 To whom the tempter impudent replied.
 I see all offers made by me how slight 155
 Thou valu'st, because offer'd, and reject'st ;

¹⁴¹ *Luxurious*] Manilius, iv. 10.

'Luxuriamque lucris eminus, luxuque rapinas.'

Dunster.

Nothing will please the difficult and nice,
 Or nothing more than still to contradict.
 On the other side know also thou, that I
 On what I offer set as high esteem, 180
 Nor what I part with mean to give for nought;
 All these which in a moment thou behold'st,
 The kingdoms of the world to thee I give;
 For, giv'n to me, I give to whom I please,
 No trifle; yet with this reserve, not else, 185
 On this condition, if thou wilt fall down,
 And worship me as thy superior lord,
 Easily done, and hold them all of me:
 For what can less so great a gift deserve?

Whom thus our Saviour answer'd with disdain.
 I never lik'd thy talk, thy offers less,
 Now both abhor, since thou hast dar'd to utter
 The abominable terms, impious condition;
 But I endure the time, till which expir'd,
 Thou hast permission on me. It is written 175
 The first of all commandments, Thou shalt worship
 The Lord thy God, and only him shalt serve;
 And dar'st thou to the Son of God propound
 To worship thee accurst, now more accurst
 For this attempt, bolder than that on Eve, 180
 And more blasphemous? which expect to rue.
 The kingdoms of the world to thee were giv'n,
 Permitted rather, and by thee usurp'd,
 Other donation none thou canst produce:

¹⁸⁷ *the difficult*] Jortin and Sympson would read '*thee* difficult.'

If giv'n, by whom but by the King of kings, 185
God over all Supreme? if given to thee,
By thee how fairly is the giver now
Repaid? but gratitude in thee is lost
Long since. Wert thou so void of fear or shame,
As offer them to me the Son of God? 190
To me my own, on such abhorred pact,
That I fall down and worship thee as God?
Get thee behind me; plain thou now appear'st
That evil one, Satan for ever damn'd.

To whom the fiend with fear abash'd replied. 195
Be not so sore offended, Son of God,
Though sons of God both angels are and men,
If I, to try whether in higher sort
Than these thou bear'st that title, have propos'd
What both from men and angels I receive, 200
Tetrarchs of fire, air, flood, and on the earth
Nations beside from all the quarter'd winds,
God of this world invok'd and world beneath;
Who then thou art, whose coming is foretold
To me so fatal, me it most concerns. 205
The trial hath indamag'd thee no way,
Rather more honour left and more esteem;
Me naught advantag'd, missing what I aim'd.
Therefore let pass, as they are transitory,
The kingdoms of this world; I shall no more 210
Advise thee; gain them as thou canst, or not.
And thou thyself seem'st otherwise inclin'd
Than to a worldly crown, addicted more
To contemplation and profound dispute,

As by that early action may be judg'd, 215
 When, slipping from thy mother's eye, thou went'st
 Alone into the temple, there wast found
 Amongst the gravest rabbies disputant
 On points and questions fitting Moses' chair,
 Teaching not taught; the childhood shows the man,
 As morning shows the day. Be famous then 221
 By wisdom; as thy empire must extend,
 So let extend thy mind o'er all the world
 In knowledge, all things in it comprehend:
 All knowledge is not couch'd in Moses' law, 225
 The Pentateuch, or what the prophets wrote;
 The Gentiles also know, and write, and teach
 To admiration, led by nature's light;
 And with the Gentiles much thou must converse,
 Ruling them by persuasion as thou mean'st; 230
 Without their learning how wilt thou with them,
 Or they with thee, hold conversation meet?
 How wilt thou reason with them? how refute
 Their idolisms, traditions, paradoxes?
 Error by his own arms is best evinc'd. 235
 Look once more, ere we leave this specular mount,
 Westward, much nearer by south-west, behold
 Where on the Ægean shore a city stands

217 *wast found*] In Milton's own edition and others, it was
 printed 'was.' Tickell made the emendation 'wast,' and
 Fenton adopted it.

230 *pure*] 'Athenis tenuē cœlum.' Oic de fato. v. Pricæum
 ad Apulium, p. 76.

In stately cities, and in fruitful soil,
 In temperate breathing of the milder heaven.

Gorboduc, act ii. sc. 1.

Built nobly, pure the air, and light the soil,
 Athens, the eye of Greece, mother of arts 240
 And eloquence, native to famous wits,
 Or hospitable, in her sweet recess,
 City or suburban, studious walks and shades.
 See there the olive grove of Academe,
 Plato's retirement, where the Attic bird 245
 Trills her thick-warbled notes the summer long;
 There flow'ry hill Hymettus with the sound
 Of bees' industrious murmur oft invites
 To studious musing; there Ilissus rolls
 His whispering stream; within the walls then
 view 250
 The schools of ancient sages; his who bred
 Great Alexander to subdue the world,
 Lyceum there, and painted Stoa next:
 There thou shalt hear and learn the secret power
 Of harmony, in tones and numbers hit 255
 By voice or hand, and various-measur'd verse,
 Æolian charms and Dorian lyric odes,
 And his who gave them breath, but higher sung,

²⁴⁰ eye] Phil. Jud. Opera, ed. Mangey, ii. p. 487. *ὄπερ γὰρ ἐν ὀφθαλμῷ κόρη, ἣ ἐν ψυχῇ λογισμὸς, τοῦτ' ἐν Ἑλλάδι Ἀθῆναι.* Tockl.

²⁴⁷ flow'ry] Val. Flacc. v. 344. 'Florea juga Hymetti.'
 and Ov. Met. vii. 702. Sil. Ital. ii. 217. *Newton. Dunster.*

²⁵⁷ charms] Hor. Od. iii. xxx. 18.

'Princeps Æolium carmen ad Italos
 Deduxisse modos' —

and Od. iv. iii. 12.

Newton.

Blind Melesigenes, thence Homer call'd,
 Whose poem Phœbus challeng'd for his own. ²⁶⁰
 Thence what the lofty grave tragedians taught
 In Chorus or Iambic, teachers best
 Of moral prudence, with delight receiv'd,
 In brief sententious precepts, while they treat
 Of fate, and chance, and change in human life;
 High actions and high passions best describing.
 Thence to the famous orators repair,
 Those ancient, whose resistless eloquence
 Wielded at will that fierce democratie,
 Shook the arsenal, and fulmin'd over Greece, ²⁷⁰
 To Macedon, and Artaxerxes' throne:
 To sage philosophy next lend thine ear,
 From heaven descended to the low-rooft house
 Of Socrates; see there his tenement,
 Whom well inspir'd the oracle pronounc'd ²⁷⁵
 Wisest of men; from whose mouth issued forth

²⁶¹ *lofty*] 'The *tragical* poet who wrote his Poesies with so *grave and lofty* a style.' Holland's Plinie, p. 607.

²⁶⁹ *Wielded*] Sackville's Gorboduc, act iii. sc. 1.

'Worthy to wield a large and mighty realm.'

²⁷⁰ *fulmin'd*] Aristoph. Acharn. v. 531, of Pericles,

Ἡστραπτεν, ἐβρόντα, συνεκκα τήν Ἑλλάδα.

Newton.

²⁷⁶ *Wisest of men*] Plin. Nat. Hist. lib. xxxiv. c. 12, vol. vi. p. 65, ed. Brot. and lib. vii. c. xxxi. 81. vol. ii. p. 124, 'Socrati cunctis ab eodem deo sapientia prælato.' 'Apud Græcos Socrates, oraculo Apollinis Pythii (sapientia) prælatus cunctis;' and Apulii Apologia, p. 425. ed. Delph. 'Vir (Socrates) omnium sapientissimus.'

Mellifluous streams that water'd all the schools
 Of Academics old and new, with those
 Surnam'd Peripatetics, and the sect
 Epicurean, and the Stoic severe ; 280
 These here revolve, or, as thou lik'st, at home,
 Till time mature thee to a kingdom's weight ;
 These rules will render thee a king complete
 Within thyself, much more with empire join'd.

To whom our Saviour sagely thus reply'd. 285
 Think not but that I know these things, or think
 I know them not ; not therefore am I short
 Of knowing what I ought : he who receives
 Light from above, from the fountain of light,
 No other doctrine needs, though granted true : 290
 But these are false, or little else but dreams,
 Conjectures, fancies, built on nothing firm.
 The first and wisest of them all profess'd
 To know this only, that he nothing knew ;
 The next to fabling fell and smooth conceits ; 295
 A third sort doubted all things, though plain sense ;
 Others in virtue plac'd felicity,
 But virtue join'd with riches and long life ;
 In corporal pleasure he and careless ease ;

277 *water'd*] Manilius, speaking of Homer, ii. 8.

—Cujusque ex ore profusos

Omnis posteritas latices in carmina duxit.

and Ovid. Amor. iii. ix. 25.

Dunster.

290 *pleasure he*] 'He' is here contemptuously emphatical.
Dunster, I wonder therefore that the commentators did not

The Stoic last in philosophic pride, 300
 By him call'd virtue; and his virtuous man,
 Wise, perfect in himself, and all possessing,
 Equal to God, oft shames not to prefer,
 As fearing God nor man, contemning all
 Wealth, pleasure, pain or torment, death and life,
 Which when he lists he leaves, or boasts he can;
 For all his tedious talk is but vain boast,
 Or subtle shifts conviction to evade.
 Alas! what can they teach and not mislead,
 Ignorant of themselves, of God much more, 310
 And how the world began, and how man fell
 Degraded by himself, on grace depending?
 Much of the soul they talk, but all awry,
 And in themselves seek virtue, and to themselves
 All glory arrogate, to God give none; 315
 Rather accuse him under usual names,
 Fortune and fate, as one regardless quite
 Of mortal things. Who therefore seeks in these
 True wisdom, finds her not, or by delusion
 Far worse, her false resemblance only meets, 320

acknowledge the emphasis of 'Him,' at ver. 583, instead of accusing Milton of grammatical inaccuracy.

'So *Satan* fell; and straight a fiery globe
 Of Angels on full sail of wing flew nigh,
 Who on their plummy bows received **HIM** soft.'

That is, 'Our Saviour,' 'him' *κατ' ἐξοχήν*.

³⁰⁸ *Equal*] Newton reads 'equals.'

³¹⁸ *awry*] Drayton's *Polyolbion*, s. 1.

'But their opinions fail'd, *by error led awry*.' *Dunster*

An empty cloud. However, many books
 Wise men have said are wearisome ; who reads
 Incessantly, and to his reading brings not
 A spirit and judgment equal or superior,
 (And what he brings what need he elsewhere seek ?)
 Uncertain and unsettled still remains, 320
 Deep vers'd in books, and shallow in himself,
 Crude or intoxicate, collecting toys,
 And trifles for choice matters, worth a sponge ;
 As children gath'ring pebbles on the shore. 330
 Or if I would delight my private hours
 With music or with poem, where so soon
 As in our native language can I find
 That solace ? all our law and story strew'd
 With hymns, our psalms with artful terms inscrib'd,
 Our Hebrew songs and harps in Babylon,
 That pleas'd so well our victor's ear, declare
 That rather Greece from us these arts deriv'd ;
 Ill imitated, while they loudest sing
 The vices of their deities and their own 340
 In fable, hymn, or song, so personating
 Their gods ridiculous, and themselves past shame.
 Remove their swelling epithets, thick laid
 As varnish on a harlot's cheek, the rest,
 Thin sown with aught of profit or delight, 345
 Will far be found unworthy to compare

³²¹ books] Butler's Rem. by Thyer, vol. ii. p. 489, 'No man is the wiser for his books until he is above them.'

³⁴⁴ varnish] Hamlet, act iii. sc. i.

'The harlot's cheek, beautied with plast'ring art.' *Dunster.*

With Sion's songs, to all true tastes excelling,
 Where God is prais'd aright, and godlike men,
 The Holiest of Holies, and his saints : 349
 — Such are from God inspir'd, not such from thee —
 Unless where moral virtue is express'd
 By light of nature not in all quite lost.
 Their orators thou then extoll'st, as those
 The top of eloquence, statists indeed,
 And lovers of their country, as may seem ; 356
 But herein to our prophets far beneath,
 As men divinely taught, and better teaching
 The solid rules of civil government
 In their majestic unaffected style,
 Than all the oratory of Greece and Rome. 360
 In them is plainest taught, and easiest learnt,
 What makes a nation happy, and keeps it so,
 What ruins kingdoms, and lays cities flat ;
 These only with our law best form a king.

³⁶⁰ *Such are*] This passage is considered obscure and perplexed by the commentators. Mr. Dunster's transposition (placing verse 351 and 352 after verse 345) certainly renders it clearer; but this being unauthorized by any edition, I would read thus:

—— the rest

Thin sown with aught of profit or delight,
 Will far be found unworthy to compare
 With Sion's songs; (to all true taste excelling
 Where God is prais'd aright, and god-like men,
 The holiest of holies, and his saints,
 Such are from God inspir'd, not sent from thee;)
 Unless where moral virtue is express'd.
 Thus, without any alteration, I think the passage is clear.

So spake the Son of God ; but Satan, now, 293
Quite at a loss, for all his darts were spent,
Thus to our Saviour with stern brow reply'd.

Since neither wealth, nor honour, arms, nor arts,
Kingdom, nor empire pleases thee, nor aught
By me propos'd in life contemplative 297
Or active, tended on by glory or fame,
What dost thou in this world ? the wilderness
For thee is fittest place ; I found thee there,
And thither will return thee ; yet remember
What I foretell thee, soon thou shalt have cause
To wish thou never hadst rejected thus
Nicely or cautiously my offer'd aid,
Which would have set thee in short time with ease
On David's throne, or throne of all the world,
Now at full age, fulness of time, thy season, 300
When prophecies of thee are best fulfill'd.
Now contrary, if I read aught in heaven,
Or heaven write aught of fate, by what the stars,
Voluminous, or single characters,
In their conjunction met, give me to spell, 305
Sorrows, and labours, opposition, hate,
Attend thee, scorns, reproaches, injuries,
Violence, and stripes, and lastly cruel death ;
A kingdom they portend thee, but what kingdom,
Real or allegoric, I discern not, 309
Nor when ; eternal sure, as without end,
Without beginning ; for no date prefix
Directs me in the starry rubric set.

293 darts] Eurip. Hecub. 608.

Kal taûta mèn dh voûs êróxενεν μάτην. Dunster.

So saying he took, for still he knew his power
 Not yet expir'd, and to the wilderness ³⁸⁵
 Brought back the Son of God, and left him there,
 Feigning to disappear. Darkness now rose,
 As daylight sunk, and brought in low'ring night,
 Her shadowy offspring, unsubstantial both,
 Privation mere of light and absent day. ⁴⁰⁰
 Our Saviour, meek and with untroubled mind
 After his aery jaunt, though hurried sore,
 Hungry and cold betook him to his rest,
 Wherever, under some concourse of shades,
 Whose branching arms thick intertwin'd might
 shield
 From dews and damps of night his shelter'd head,
 But, shelter'd, slept in vain, for at his head
 The tempter watch'd, and soon with ugly dreams
 Disturb'd his sleep : and either tropic now
 'Gan thunder, and both ends of heav'n the clouds
 From many a horrid rift abortive pour'd
 Fierce rain with light'ning mix'd, water with fire
 In ruin reconcil'd : nor slept the winds
 Within their stony caves, but rush'd abroad
 From the four hinges of the world, and fell ⁴¹⁵

⁴¹¹ rift] Virg. *Æn.* iii. 198.

'Involvere diem nimbi et nox humida cœlum
 Abstulit; ingeminant abruptis nubibus ignes.' *Dumster.*
 and Lucret. ii. 213—5.

⁴¹⁴ stony] Lucret. vi. 195.

'*Speluncasque velut, saxis pendentibus structas*
Cernere; quas venti cum tempestate coorta
Conplerunt.' *Dumster.*

On the vext wilderness, whose tallest pines,
 Though rooted deep as high, and sturdiest oaks
 Bow'd their stiff necks, loaden with stormy blasts,
 Or torn up sheer : Ill wast thou shrouded then,
 O patient Son of God, yet only stood'st 426
 Unshaken ! nor yet staid the terror there ;
 Infernal ghosts and hellish furies round [shriek'd,
 Environ'd thee ; some howl'd, some yell'd, some
 Some bent at thee their fiery darts, while thou
 Sat'st unappall'd in calm and sinless peace. 428
 Thus pass'd the night so foul, till morning fair
 Came forth with pilgrim steps in amice gray,
 Who with her radiant finger still'd the roar
 Of thunder, chas'd the clouds, and laid the winds,
 And grisly spectres, which the fiend had rais'd
 To tempt the Son of God with terrors dire.
 And now the sun with more effectual beams
 Had cheer'd the face of earth, and dried the wet
 From drooping plant or dropping tree ; the birds,
 Who all things now behold more fresh and green,
 After a night of storm so ruinous, 430
 Clear'd up their choicest notes in bush and spray,
 To gratulate the sweet return of morn :
 Nor yet amidst this joy and brightest morn

⁴²⁶ *Environ'd*] Shakesp. Rich. III. act i. sc. v.

' ————— a legion of foul fiends

Environ'd me and howled in my ears.' *Dunster*.

⁴²⁷ *amice*] Spens. F. Qu. i. iv. 18.

'Array'd in habit black and *amice thin*.' *Newton*.

⁴²⁸ *gratulate*] 'And early birds with songs congratulate.
Marino's Slaughter of the Innocents, p. 126. (Trans.)

Was absent, after all his mischief done, 440
 The prince of darkness, glad would also seem
 Of this fair change, and to our Saviour came;
 Yet with no new device, they all were spent,
 Rather by this his last affront resolv'd,
 Desperate of better course, to vent his rage, 445
 And mad despite to be so oft repell'd.
 Him walking on a sunny hill he found,
 Back'd on the north and west by a thick wood :
 Out of the wood he starts in wonted shape,
 And in a careless mood thus to him said. 450

Fair morning yet betides thee, Son of God,
 After a dismal night : I heard the wrack
 As earth and sky would mingle, but myself
 Was distant ; and these flaws, though mortals fear
 them

As dangerous to the pillar'd frame of heaven, 455
 Or to the earth's dark basis underneath,
 Are to the main as inconsiderable
 And harmless, if not wholesome, as a sneeze
 To man's less universe, and soon are gone ;
 Yet as being oftentimes noxious where they light 460
 On man, beast, plant, wasteful, and turbulent,
 Like turbulencies in the affairs of men,
 Over whose heads they roar, and seem to point,
 They oft fore-signify and threaten ill :
 This tempest at this desert most was bent ; 465
 Of men at thee, for only thou here dwell'st.
 Did I not tell thee, if thou did'st reject
 The perfect season offer'd with my aid

To win thy destin'd seat, but wilt prolong
 All to the push of fate, pursue thy way 470
 Of gaining David's throne no man knows when,
 For both the when and how is no where told ?
 Thou shalt be what thou art ordain'd, no doubt ;
 For angels have proclaim'd it, but concealing
 The time and means ; each act is rightliest done,
 Not when it must, but when it may be best.
 If thou observe not this, be sure to find,
 What I foretold thee, many a hard assay
 Of dangers, and adversities, and pains,
 Ere thou of Israel's sceptre get fast hold ; 480
 Whereof this ominous night that clos'd thee round,
 So many terrors, voices, prodigies,
 May warn thee, as a sure fore-going sign.
 So talk'd he, while the Son of God went on
 And staid not, but in brief him answer'd thus.

Me worse than wet thou find'st not ; other harm
 Those terrors, which thou speak'st of, did me none ;
 I never fear'd they could, though noising loud
 And threat'ning nigh ; what they can do as signs
 Betok'ning, or ill-boding, I condemn 490
 As false portents, not sent from God, but thee ;
 Who, knowing I shall reign past thy preventing,
 Obtrud'st thy offer'd aid, that I accepting
 At least might seem to hold all power of thee,
 Ambitious spirit, and would'st be thought my God,
 And storm'st refus'd, thinking to terrify 495
 Me to thy will. Desist, thou art discern'd
 And toil'st in vain, nor me in vain molest.

To whom the fiend now swoll'n with rage replied,
 Then hear, O Son of David, virgin-born ; 500
 For Son of God to me is yet in doubt :
 Of the Messiah I have heard, foretold
 By all the prophets ; of thy birth at length
 Announc'd by Gabriel with the first I knew,
 And of the angelic song in Bethlehem field, 505
 On thy birthnight, that sung thee Saviour born.
 From that time seldom have I ceas'd to eye
 Thy infancy, thy childhood, and thy youth,
 Thy manhood last, though yet in private bred ;
 Till at the ford of Jordan, whither all 510
 Flock'd to the Baptist, I among the rest,
 Though not to be baptiz'd, by voice from heaven
 Heard thee pronounc'd the Son of God belov'd.
 Thenceforth I thought thee worth my nearer view
 And narrower scrutiny, that I might learn 515
 In what degree or meaning thou art call'd
 The Son of God, which bears no single sense ;
 The Son of God I also am, or was,
 And if I was I am ; relation stands ;
 All men are sons of God ; yet thee I thought 520
 In some respect far higher so declared.
 Therefore I watch'd thy footsteps from that hour,
 And follow'd thee still on to this waste wild ;
 Where by all best conjectures I collect
 Thou art to be my fatal enemy. 525
 Good reason then, if I beforehand seek

502 *I have heard*] All the editions read 'have heard.' 'Had'
 seems absolutely requisite. *Dunster*.

To understand my adversary, who,
 And what he is, his wisdom, power, intent ;
 By parl, or composition, truce, or league,
 To win him, or win from him what I can. 530

And opportunity I here have had
 To try thee, sift thee, and confess have found thee
 Proof against all temptation, as a rock
 Of adamant, and as a centre firm,
 To the utmost of mere man both wise and good, 535
 Not more ; for honours, riches, kingdoms, glory,
 Have been before contemn'd, and may again :
 Therefore to know what more thou art than man,
 Worth naming Son of God by voice from heav'n,
 Another method I must now begin. 540

So saying he caught him up, and without wing
 Of hippogrif bore through the air sublime
 Over the wilderness and o'er the plain ;
 Till underneath them fair Jerusalem,
 The holy city, lifted high her towers, 545
 And higher yet the glorious temple rear'd
 Her pile, far off appearing like a mount
 Of alabaster, topp'd with golden spires :
 There on the highest pinnacle he set
 'The Son of God, and added thus in scorn. 550

There stand, if thou wilt stand ; to stand upright
 Will ask thee skill. I to thy Father's house
 Have brought thee, and highest plac'd ; highest is
 Now show thy progeny ; if not to stand, [best.

⁵⁴⁸ *alabaster*] From Clemens, and P. Mela, see Heber's *Life* of Bishop Taylor, ii. 272. 'Of Egyptian Thebes with its houses of *alabaster*.'

Cast thyself down ; safely, if Son of God ; 505
 For it is written, He will give command
 Concerning thee to his angels, in their hands
 They shall uplift thee, lest at any time
 Thou chance to dash thy foot against a stone.

To whom thus Jesus. Also it is written, 510
 Tempt not the Lord thy God : he said and stood :
 But Satan smitten with amazement fell.
 As when earth's son Antæus, to compare
 Small things with greatest, in Irassa strove
 With Jove's Alcides, and oft foil'd still rose, 515
 Receiving from his mother earth new strength,
 Fresh from his fall, and fiercer grapple join'd,
 Throttled at length in th' air, expir'd and fell ;
 So after many a foil the tempter proud,
 Renewing fresh assaults, amidst his pride 520
 Fell whence he stood to see his victor fall.
 And as that Theban monster that propos'd
 Her riddle, and him who solv'd it not, devour'd,
 That once found out and solv'd, for grief and spite
 Cast herself headlong from th' Ismenian steep ;
 So struck with dread and anguish fell the fiend,
 And to his crew that sat consulting, brought
 Joyless triumphals of his hop'd success,
 Ruin, and desperation, and dismay,
 Who durst so proudly tempt the Son of God. 525

508 *As when*] P. Fletcher's Purple Island, p. 163, ed. 1633.

'As when

If greatest things with lesse we may compare.'

A. Dyce.

So Satan fell; and straight a fiery globe
 Of angels on full sail of wing flew nigh,
 Who on their plummy vans receiv'd him soft
 From his uneasy station, and upbore
 As on a floating couch through the blithe air; 585
 Then in a flow'ry valley set him down
 On a green bank, and set before him spread
 A table of celestial food, divine
 Ambrosial fruits, fetch'd from the tree of life,
 And from the fount of life ambrosial drink, 590
 That soon refresh'd him wearied, and repair'd
 What hunger, if aught hunger had impair'd,
 Or thirst; and, as he fed, angelic quires
 Sung heav'nly anthems of his victory
 Over temptation and the tempter proud. 595

True Image of the father, whether thron'd
 In the bosom of bliss, and light of light
 Conceiving, or remote from heaven, enshrin'd

581 *globe*] G. Fletcher's *Christ's Triumph*, st. xiii.

—— 'out there flies

A globe of winged angels swift as thought.' *Todd*.

588 *him*] This inaccuracy has been remarked: and that him must refer to *Satan*; therefore I would suppose that him is used *emphatically*—so *Satan fell*; but angels received *him*, and *upbore*.

587 *spread*] G. Fletcher's *Christ's Triumph*, &c. st. 61.

'But to their Lord, now musing in his thought,
 A heavenly volley of light angels flew,
 And from his father him a banquet brought
 Through the fine element: for well they knew
 After his lenten fast he hungry grew;
 And, as he fed, the holy quires combine
 To sing a hymn of the celestial trine.' *Dunster*.

In fleshly tabernacle and human form,
 Wand'ring the wilderness, whatever place, 605
 Habit, or state, or motion, still expressing
 The Son of God, with god-like force indu'd
 Against th' attempter of thy Father's throne,
 And thief of paradise; him long of old
 Thou didst debel, and down from heaven cast 606
 With all his army; now thou hast aveng'd
 Supplanted Adam, and by vanquishing
 Temptation, hast regain'd lost Paradise,
 And frustrated the conquest fraudulent:
 He never more henceforth will dare set foot 610
 In Paradise to tempt; his snares are broke:
 For though that seat of earthly bliss be fail'd,
 A fairer Paradise is founded now
 For Adam and his chosen sons, whom thou
 A Saviour art come down to re-install 615
 Where they shall dwell secure, when time shall be,
 Of tempter and temptation without fear.
 But thou, infernal serpent, shalt not long
 Rule in the clouds; like an autumnal star,
 Or lightning, thou shalt fall from heaven, trod down
 Under his feet: for proof, ere this thou feel'st
 Thy wound, yet not thy last and deadliest wound,
 By this repulse receiv'd, and hold'st in hell
 No triumph. In all her gates Abaddon rues
 Thy bold attempt; hereafter learn with awe 625
 To dread the Son of God: he all unarm'd

605 *debel*] Virg. *Æn.* vi. 853. 'Debellare superbos.'

Newton.

Shall chase thee with the terror of his voice
From thy demoniac holds, possession foul,
Thee and thy legions ; yelling they shall fly,
And beg to hide them in a herd of swine, 630
Lest he command them down into the deep,
Bound, and to torment sent before their time.
Hail, Son of the Most High, heir of both worlds,
Queller of Satan ! On thy glorious work
Now enter, and begin to save mankind. 635

Thus they the Son of God, our Saviour meek,
Sung victor, and from heav'nly feasts refresh'd
Brought on his way with joy ; he unobserv'd
Home to his mother's house private return'd.

END OF VOL. II.

Ref

